

Theater of Everyday Life : A Christian Perspective

Todd M. Anderson

Published by Todd M. Anderson, 2026.

While every precaution has been taken in the preparation of this book, the publisher assumes no responsibility for errors or omissions, or for damages resulting from the use of the information contained herein.

THEATER OF EVERYDAY LIFE : A CHRISTIAN
PERSPECTIVE

First edition. March 30, 2026.

Copyright © 2026 Todd M. Anderson.

ISBN: 979-8233683398

Written by Todd M. Anderson.

Also by Todd M. Anderson

Reflections on Faith

Believe

Connections

Garden of Harmonies

King and Prophet

Kingdom Building

Light Scholars

Never Give In

Paradise

Personality Program

Super Conscious

The Light and Filament

The Way of Man

Universal Records

Theater of Everyday Life

Mirrors for Reflection

The Anti-Personality

The Battle Between Good and Evil

Competitive
Angelic Wisdom
Trumpets Calling
Conversion of a Sinner
Angelic Identity

Standalone

Reflections on Faith
Theater of Everyday Life : A Christian Perspective

Into the Heart Meditation Technique

The surrounding environment could be one of many possible landscapes, as there are innumerable landscapes available to us. Some are as large as the starry sky, as peaceful as a shimmering lake, or as energetic as elementary particles. We tend to assume the concrete nature of our surroundings. However, in this book, we will discuss the “gate” or “door” that resides deep within your heart and leads to fields of conscious awareness, and how that awareness is projected back onto the environment. This gate or door is in the vagus nerve in the heart. The heart beats in rhythm with the consciousness and in coherence with the physical arrangement of the universal energy.

This conscious awareness remembers the positive, neutral, and negative charges emerging in the world when the heart pulses back into the emotional mind. Through the activity of the neurons in our brains, we mentally calculate probabilities and experience our surroundings as discrete particles built and arranged into physical forms. The energetic elementary particles reflect the peaceful lake, and the peaceful lake reflects the starry sky. The mind makes this universe real.

Let us continue to develop our understanding through a mind-body practice. I will introduce a short mantra for you to repeat while incorporating a relaxation technique. This practice will help you monitor the vagal tone of your heart with a renewed focus on your breath.

- Find a quiet place to sit and relax. Let your breathing slow. Let each breath fill your lungs.

THEATER OF EVERYDAY LIFE : A CHRISTIAN PERSPECTIVE

3

- When your breath is flowing evenly, gently guide your focus to the top of your head. Imagine your skull and brain. Visualize the neocortex, the outer layers of your brain, focusing on all the folds and ridges, as if you could see them with the mind's eye.
- Imagine your brain becoming enveloped by energy. Let this energy lightly "squeeze" or "flex" the brain with a gentle compression, not a harsh grip. You are bringing your conscious awareness fully to the brain. Focus on the different areas of your brain, working together as a whole, to recognize your consciousness in this moment.
- Introduce the mantra "I Am." On your next inhale, silently say to yourself, "I." On the exhale, say, "Am." Let the words flow naturally with the rhythm of your breath.
- With each repetition, imagine gentle, warm pressure on the brain. This mental "squeeze" focuses on heightening your cognitive power and emotional stability. Each "I Am" reinforces your clarity, presence, and sense of self.
- Let the feeling of calmness and strength expand from your brain throughout your spine, heart, and body. Let your focus flow down into the heart.
- Let an imaginary pole in your heart flip itself over repeatedly until it steadies itself. Think of different

people, and see how the pole reacts, revealing your heart's perspective.

- When you are ready, slowly return your attention to the space you are in. Carry this calm “I Am” presence with you into the day.

Mirrors for Reflection

Part One

The door to Heaven on Earth was inside me, waiting to be unlocked. But, either I didn't know it was there, or I had convinced myself not to look. Until now, my life had been filled with restless dreams, plagued by doubt, overwhelmed and outmaneuvered by my own actions and thoughts. I had been fighting myself, and defeating myself. But it was the only way I'd known in this life.

I spent a lifetime erecting walls around myself and ensuring that they were secure enough to protect me, but I didn't realize that I had built my own prison. I had kept every mirror shrouded in cloth, as I was confident in my posture and my actions, and I stood ready to defend them. When finally I turned to face the truth, to face myself in the hazy glass of a large, dark mirror, I didn't find a familiar image looking back at me.

In that moment, as I looked, the walls and everything else around me disappeared. I strained to see anything but endless space. Through the smoke-filled void, I saw a serpentine silhouette. A dark, scaly figure unfurled its wings and writhed and roared, though whether its thunderous bellow was in anguish or anger, I didn't know. The creature's scowl sent me cowering to the floor and crawling backward in search of a safe haven. When the smoke cleared, I found there was nothing I could hide behind in this empty space, not even a shadow I could use for cover. There was nothing but the mirror, and the creature hovered in front of it.

The figure's form became clear as the smoke dissolved – a dragon, towering over me, seeming to fill the endless void with its body and massive wings. My heart pulsed like rapid fire, sending fear radiating throughout my body.

The dragon's eyes caught my stare, and I dared not look away. It suddenly swooped its head down toward me. When it roared again, I saw its long, sharp teeth and its forked tongue, and I felt the dry heat of its breath over my entire body.

“Author,” snarled the dragon, “you cannot evade me. You could run to the ends of the Earth, but you cannot hide from me.”

I steadied my breath, but my body remained locked in a crouched, defensive stance. I did not cede my trust, but since I could not discern a way out of the void, I heeded the dragon's warning.

“There was a time when all things good were present in the heavens. But the serpent orchestrated the fall of Adam and Eve. The serpent suggested to them that man had the power to understand all things godly. You know that the serpent was foolish, and it hid from the Eternal Father. Yet, you have not asked much more than forgiveness for your own fall from grace when acting foolishly. You have not asked what you will receive, based on your actions throughout life, but the self-assurance that keeps you from seeking this answer should be seen for the hubris that it is.”

The dragon continued, “You see that the fall of Adam and Eve was brought about by their desire to understand God in their world. And God allowed this, and He allowed the serpent to follow into this universe. You are made of that

lineage. You are not an angelic being that manifests from the heavens. You are a human. And in the lifetime you have, you need and want certain outcomes. You, like all other humans, are ambitious because there is competition. And, like all other humans, like Adam and Eve, you are fallible.” His eyes narrowed at me, and his nostrils flared in revulsion. “Corruptible.”

I measured myself against the dragon’s accusations, which I found were already deeply rooted in my understanding, even though such words had not been charged against me before.

“Listen to me this day, Author. These words will reveal your ego, which you are driven by. The ego is nothing more than the collection of aspirations you impose upon yourself. That ego, then, is the cure you administer for your own self-induced shame. Then, as you are unaware of your transgression, you continue the cycle. You are willing to endow your subconscious with magnificent moral inclination, only to then sharpen your gaze on your aspirations, putting ego before your spiritual vitality. But this deprives you of the control that you need to have over your emotional desires to determine how the spiritual subconscious should be reflected in your life.”

He said, “Your thoughts are ego-centric. And while these thoughts convey your honest notions to yourself and others, they are keeping you away from the higher truth and connection with a heavenly life. Do you have an ounce of faith that you will go anywhere in your ambitions if you see your ego as being centered in your mind and thoughts? Let me dispel you of that delusion. The universe of your creation, the uni-

verse you would like to shape and form in your imagination, would not be sensical.”

He shook his head, gravely. “It is a shame, Author, because you could be a great and wise leader. Yet, you sit in meditation and wait for God to guide you in everything you do. You imagine the savior, Jesus Christ, returning. You wait and perceive your ego as something much more important than it is. Your emotions have become suggestable to the subconscious, and you have lost control over your logic. Your honesty is refreshing to many. But it leaves you open to temptation and other people's craft. You are a target for your competitors, as you will play into their games just like how you behave in spiritual confession. I want you to know, Author, that type of life will not change many people or lead many to a new worldview of Christianity.”

The dragon continued, “Author, you are not a spiritual monk. You are not a pastor. You are not even as noble as you would like to think. You have a lot of confidence in your own words because you listen to your heart. But living by a heart-centric code is a risky game to play.”

The dragon then let out a deep wail that echoed through my soul. He became fixated on my eyes, and he stared into me with a penetrating gaze. It took every ounce of courage I had to reflect the gaze back at him. The dragon nodded silently. He seemed to confirm in his own mind what he had thought.

I felt emboldened by this display of what I thought to be his approval. “I will discover the higher truth,” I avowed. “It is God's Word that I live by, and I will not fall prey to the schemes of my competitors or even the Devil.”

He laughed at this point. “Author, you will never succeed in thwarting the Devil. His pain is intense, and his determination fierce. The Devil may not use his full intensity against you in your lifetime, here and now. But in the worlds away from what is seen and experienced, that serpent does exist.”

He looked down at me again. “You may find it odd that I would give you any assistance that would bring you closer to the Lord. And if you search throughout all the universes, you may not find an answer that satisfies you. But that should not be your focus. Listen to my words, Author. To understand God in Heaven fully, you must awaken to your masculinity. Your mirror opposite traits seem to you to be forbidden fruit, as they are the nectar of God. However, as you embrace these unfamiliar feelings and actions, you will develop inclinations of discipline and protection through masculinity.

“Without knowing why, or understanding the consequences, you have created an alter ego for yourself. As you projected this alter ego outward and honed your behavior according to strategy you thought to be purposeful, you became the epitome of humanness.

“Your conscious reality still continues to recede into memories. And you should allow this to continue, as it is through memory that you will understand what truly is important to God for your life. Your mind will make your lessons real, and the life around you a dream.

“Author,” said the dragon, “I play my games of conquest to find a hero to learn from. I will learn from you and help you in your humanity. And by helping you, I can show my repentance to God. These wars in the world between mankind

are of my creation. But to elevate your conscious understanding and watch you become a righteous leader would be a proud moment for me.

“Do not mistake my help as unconditional, though. You will be under my watch. And if you betray me, I will have your soul tempted by the shadows. For now, you do not have to fear the hellish world I have reserved for you. But do not be tempted to be used as a tool for the elite. And do not be tempted to become overly powerful yourself. You want to be feared and loved the same.”

He moved toward me, slowly. “Author, do you accept this challenge?”

I knew he had taken many souls to his side. And, although it sounded like his intentions were sincere, I felt like he could not fully be trusted. I looked deep into the dragon’s eyes. Through them, I could see that he had fire and brimstone raging in the pit of his stomach. As I opened my mouth and prepared to give my answer, the dragon looked upward to the heavens and shrieked. I was startled, more by the abruptness than by the sound itself, as it seemed to be a reaction to something internal rather than a threat directed at me. I quickly understood that the dragon did not intend me any harm in that moment. I felt that the dragon understood my motivations as well.

As the echoing shriek rippled off into the void, the dragon regained his composure. Then, after a moment of contemplation, he turned to acknowledge me. His demeanor appeared different than it had before. He looked at me with curiosity rather than contempt. He settled into position, seated upright, then he smiled. As the dragon straightened its pos-

ture, I sensed that I could let go of the fear I was harboring, and I straightened my posture as well.

“I have watched you, Author. I have witnessed your transformation. And I have learned a great deal from you.”

I heard the words as if they were coming from my mind at the same time the dragon said them. Although their meaning was not clear to me, I knew them to be true.

The dragon laughed. “You do not know how this is possible, as our encounter has been brief, and your true transformation has not yet begun. But you do not yet understand the nature of time. You will, if you desire to know, and if you listen. And, as you have empowered me with understanding, I will teach you how to become who you want to be in this life.”

He shifted again in his position, and he looked deep into my eyes. “Let me explain. There is another world awaiting you. I will guide you initially on this quest to understand how to command yourself. You will be able to manage your emotions and strategically embed a layer of imagination, this being your new alter ego, between yourself and the surroundings. This layer is where the pain you so shamefully accept as the result of being irresponsible and meek can have space to change and evolve.”

He looked at me as if he knew what I was thinking. He leaned back slightly and nodded to himself. “You are unsure whether you will recognize when you have begun to gain control of your life, as you were convinced that you had a measure of control before. The way we would recognize the control is the same way we would perceive a reconciliation with the conscious. Let me explain something to you, Au-

thor. Let me explain how the spiritual subconscious worked to connect you in spirit with all things heavenly. And how it works to protect the heavens, but it does not necessarily protect you from pain.

“Author, the workings of the subconscious are complicated, as it divides you from the reality of your surroundings. The subconscious is an energy or spirit that has been on this earth for many thousands of years, existing as part of this earth. You have evolved with this subconscious spirit. The access to it is in the universes. It remains subdued and reactive, ever suggestible to the actions you perceive.

“Those words that you perceive in the subconscious are real. The thoughts and actions that manifest the world are your interpretations, filtered through your sense-making processes. Intuitively, you understand me in your imagination as a character of religion. You see me as a source of wisdom and glory, helping navigate your life. You must not rely on me for protection, though. Protection will come from the space you create for your imagined alter ego. You must put in front of you the life force of who you would rather be. And in time, that protective stance will become deeply embedded within your ability to be consciously aware in your senses.

“Now, Author, I want you to understand that there is a lineage in you waiting to be recognized. The humanity and spirituality of those you evolved from, your spiritual family, remains within you. And their fierceness, which is perpetuated through this lineage, will be a great advantage. It spurs action. Acting in your lifetime is competitive, protective, and worthwhile, if you can take the helm and decisively steer those emotions. Your subconscious should never drive

your ambitions, as it jumps to conclusions concocted by the imagination. This will cause you to become jaded, or impulsive, or both. And it will irritate other people.”

The dragon raised itself, pleased with how the conversation was going. I could tell it set lofty goals for me. I just didn’t know what those goals would be yet, or which of those I would impose upon myself.

“Author, you are able to pick up on many sensitive emotions from others and yourself. You are a fine instrument, attuned to the Words of Heaven. This has been evident in your actions, which reflect those intuitive feelings. But I dare think that perhaps you can change over the course of our conversations.”

The dragon continued. “Author, if you were to pursue your ambitions, you would not be so sensitive to the emotions of others and compelled to react. You would imagine your alter ego and perceive your reaction differently. Author, this is the point of this story. The point is not to get back to Heaven. Nor is it to avoid a hellish life. It is to empower you to live a life of grand design, one that works within your everyday lifestyle. And, although you have shown great determination, your willingness to achieve is nothing to depend on. Your actions and sincere intentions to keep working through the heart to bring heavenly words to pass are not failsafe guards in life.

“Now listen to me, Author. You can imagine yourself valiant. You can imagine yourself sinister. You can be positive or negative. You may turn to logic and strategy. You can make friends or enemies of people. But it is important for you to understand that this is not about designing the proper

and perfect way to live. The reason for creating a new alter ego is to foster your sense of worthiness. Yes, the heavens exist in your connection through the heart. And since you have that connection, you have already learned many lessons about grace and power. I would ask you to use those subconscious ideas of morality in developing your alter ego.

“However, it is up to you. Your subconscious will enable you to be anything you imagine yourself to be. I’ll prove it to you. You can create an entire world before yourself using your imagination. All you need to do is to understand logically how it will come to fruition from that image in front of you, and think backward.”

I began to strategize a world, and it immediately took shape before my mind’s eye. It was inhabited by people who resembled those I knew well and loved, but the environments were amalgamations of places I had seen and heard of.

The dragon smiled, knowingly. He mused, “Where is the resistance? There is no one but you blocking the path forward. Are you willing to sacrifice the energy and effort to make this world reality? Think about it, and let your subconscious take action to create this ideal lifestyle.”

I heard the dragon’s voice echoing from the void, but I continued to visualize the new world around me. Structures became more solid, and details became crisper.

“This is not magic. This universe that you perceive is just one of many that can possibly exist.”

“Will it become reality through prayer?” I asked.

“No.” He said. “The transformative effects of surrounding yourself with like-minded people exist in prayer circles. However, the community in your imagined world will build

its culture over time based on who makes most of the decisions.”

The imaginary world dissolved around me, and the void appeared once again.

“Author,” said the dragon, “I interfered in your thoughts for reasons yet unknown to you. I will continue to challenge you to protect yourself from pain and torture in this lifetime. Creating an alter ego would be the best way for you to compete and function in this life. You have talents.”

The dragon looked at the heavens and said, “In time, I will receive a message from the Heavenly Father. At that time, I will give you back to Jesus. I will not interfere with those spirits in the heavens who need you to work on their behalf. And in those moments when God truly functions within you, through your actions and writing, I will be supportive.”

“Author, there are good people who need to hear your words on developing the conscious-driven alter ego within themselves. I will guide you as you write this story so that this result may be achieved.”

The dragon then slowly shook his head. “Unfortunately, Author, one of the lines of communication between us has been severed. It was already too late to intervene when I heard the wailing and screams of those in your past who are now trying to arrange your downfall. You have tormented some, and in their estimation, you deserve unrest.” The dragon looked inquisitively at me. He continued, “The spiritual effects your actions will have on those people will be long-lasting, to be sure. And these memories remain in the subconscious, so even though your energy, in spirit, may have

built some resistance to those ideas, you can still perceive the effects of the dormant anger lingering around you. These are shadows, and they fight you in the conscious realm.

“I will intervene with these shadows. They work as karmic forces of anger, frustrating your consciousness. If you do not distance yourself from this energy, it has long-lasting effects. You will continue to feel the angry energy until it manifests somehow in your life. Karma is not outpaced or overcome simply because you ignore it or pretend it to be something other than the retribution of those you have injured. Everyone has shadows to defend against. This is because life is competitive and the spirit endures across time.

“The shadows you have experienced have indeed been people’s energy, which you absorbed in life. They may have attributed their frustration, anger, or sorrow to something they have perceived to be your doing. But regardless of the shadows’ origins, you must experience that anger to justify it and move forward.”

The dragon then lowered its head and directed my attention to a gold scepter staff that had not been there just a moment before. “Author, take this staff. Hold it in your hands and experience all the frustration being alleviated. This staff will be a guiding rule over the shadows in your life. Your alter ego is one meant for leadership. You inherently know how to lead. This is because you strategize to achieve the results you see in yourself. You will not be intimidated by that angry energy that is directed at you.

“The competitive landscape of life is inescapable. And you may want to help others and make life more enjoyable for them, but you cannot always allow people to do as they

wish just to please them. Their game in life is to achieve. And taking it upon yourself to help them advance simply because you are available in your lifetime does nothing more than satisfy their command. They will justify using your help to achieve greatness in their lifetimes, and still, they will justify their anger to themselves. They will control their destiny while you help them feel grand.

“Author, the heavens will protect you, but only to a certain point. They want the best for you and show you through your intuitive voice in your heart how to keep yourself safe. However, this staff will protect you in a way that will also compel you to deal with that energy in the space around you. You do not need to let that energy manifest in your life. You need to maintain boundaries. You need to protect your energy as you walk through life.”

Looking down at the scepter, the dragon said, “I have been telling you about your spiritual family, who are your guiding spirits in life. They will help you. Listen to that tribe of the spirit through this staff. Command their energy in a way that is purposeful to you. This golden staff is your power yet to be revealed.”

He sighed. “Author, you know that the world holds terrible inconveniences for you. The world has places, people, and things chosen from history and arranged by a ruling class. This is a rule of man that was made to promote the order they desire. The inconveniences then have been maintained in the world to keep you in a particular position. But using that strategy is not in your repertoire. It is, without a doubt, the manifestation of the command of many generations, emerging as part of the political culture.

“But even if that were not the case, there would still be challenges. Life is not painless. And it takes heart and courage to ask for a reprieve from karma. But those in the spiritual world aspire to help the people on earth. Therefore, you may feel powerful, even without having access to all the places, people, and things in the world. However, Author, you will find that to access the places, people, and things that are necessary for you to achieve greatness, there will be a fight. That is because resources are scarce. And in the moments when the people who have command are confronted, they politicize the events in their stories told.”

The dragon looked into my eyes once more. Solemnly, he said, “I would like you to know, Author, that you deserve the dreams you imagine. But when you strategize the final idea and logically work your way backward, you will find there are difficulties in commanding these places, people, and things. As you will soon learn, the subconscious understands where resistance occurs, who the people are who may intervene, and what the emotional incongruence is to your belief system. However, as you pursue your aspirations, the people in the real world will be increasingly competitive with you as you seek greater power.

“Author, because you are ambitious, you already have in you the confidence to strive for a greater endgame than other people. You are driven and intelligent. However, all the effort and good intent need a purpose. Until now, these have merely been a means for displaying your sheer mastery of talent.”

The dragon touched the scepter, then looked at me thoughtfully. “Now, I must tell you that the subconscious

boundary that the scepter staff presents you is of a spiritual nature. It is my guidance in spirit to you.”

I nodded to show that I understood and that I was willing to follow the dragon’s guidance.

“Good,” the dragon said. “You will develop your alter ego now. This space is a belief in yourself. A belief that anything felt in spirit can be commanded by your conscious. You control yourself. Therefore, you command your logic and emotions. You will rule over what you allow to happen, and ultimately, you will command your reactions to other places, people, and things.”

The dragon looked up at the heavens, saying, “Author, you will not be involved in anything you find oppressive. Protect yourself from the angry energy and remember those games that everyone plays. Your safety in life depends on how well you can discern what other people are pursuing for themselves. Your enjoyment is in the bonds of trust you have in your lifetime.

“Remember that not everyone strives to command in their lifetime. But they are still part of the culture of the places, people, and things over which command is maintained. Therefore, they are stable and meek. They may not ever be truly heard during their lifetimes, or even through a legacy, but they must still be considered in your perception and assessment of the games of strategy people play. They will be affected through the politics of the culture.

“Author, these ideas I shared with you are readily sensed by your awareness in the alter ego you command. The investment of mental energy to create your new alter ego will provide a protective space between your truest self and what

others learn from you. Know that through this alter ego, you will be able to live out a world of your own imagination. This world is where you point that scepter toward. The spiritual subconscious will help you realize this world. It will continue to gather ideas, and develop and refine those thoughts into something intuitive, yet worthy of aspiration. However, you must command the alter ego in assessing the games of strategy within the culture of places, people, and things.

“Use the scepter to make choices. But always remember that you must maintain your alter ego through honor. You might not always make a perfect decision. Your strategy, though, if it is aligned with your belief system, will honor you. Always honor yourself through the decisions you make.

“Author, there is a man in you who wants to elevate you to the best possible self. Engage your intuition and be precise with your words. Showcase your talents. But also remember that the spirit will provide you with some protection.

“Author, you carry a message within yourself. Deep down, you feel different than everyone around you, like you don’t belong. And yet you have more admiration and respect from others than you realize. This bizarre narrative you ascribe to yourself is a mindset. But this mindset of yours stands as an obstacle in your way, making it more challenging for you to accomplish your ambitions. And yet, you also feel like you have greatness deep inside that might be accessible to you if only you were in a different space with new people and novel things that could help remove the resistance.

“I will tell you more about this mindset. It has made for a brutal upbringing due to the unnecessary hindrances it has caused. Life already comes with hardships. These don’t go

away just because you stand in your own way, they add to the hardship in life. It is the same way with competition, which only compounds the struggles in life. You will always have to grapple with competition.”

I knew what the dragon said was true. I did grapple with my emotions, and sometimes I even feared the results I wanted the most.

As if the dragon was able to read my thoughts, he stated, “Do not get in your own way, Author. The mindset to be someone different is available to you. And yet this space between you and the different outcomes you desire steams within your mind.

“Author,” said the dragon, “you know of everything that has resulted in this lifetime to bring you to this point. You understand the hardships. However, you frequently assume that others correctly estimate what you envision from yourself. This is not only wrong, but maintaining the misconception is perceived as weak and arrogant. I want you to imagine your alter ego in front of you. What you tell yourself is going to be different than what you tell your alter ego. And in time, you will talk to yourself the same as if you were your altered self. Let me explain.”

The dragon looked down at the scepter staff. “You follow generations of spirited, competitive personalities who spent their lifetimes here before you arrived on this planet. The energy of this spiritual family still remains, and you can tap in to it to let them lead you as well.

“Discuss with that spiritual subconscious just how much you involve yourself with your alter ego. It is dormant now, but you will awaken the alter ego and invoke its presence

when needed. And in time, you will feel the ego shift automatically to the alter ego when needed.

“You see, Author, the nerve tracts in your mind help to actualize your emotions. But this explains the physical reaction in your body, and you have easily understood this. What I need you to understand now though is that you will remain just as you are, your old self in mind, as long as you are unwilling to change through mindfulness. Mindfulness is a force of impulse that can be used to direct changes to the nerve pathways in the mind.

“Your thoughts act as chains of reasoning as they are carried along the neural pathways. This mindset, then, is crafted by you over time as you build and remove protective psychological boundaries.”

I thought about the pathways in my mind, imagining synapses firing at random. But the dragon’s voice pulled me back into the void once again.

“Author, as you know, the subconscious will entertain the thoughts generated through the activity in your neural pathways, which you simultaneously project and perceive in this world. The shadows you wrestle with are karmic, as the universe presents them as angry thoughts that you understand to be directed at yourself.

“These shadows bear old histories that you repeat in yourself because you have built your mindset based on them. Do you understand how your history is one that is subject to the impulses of the nervous system through ideas that are repeatedly strung together? To change this mindset, you need to awaken to a new journey. This new trajectory then

is pointing your subconscious spirit toward a new way to evolve.

“The new mindset will help you to adjust to the position of the world around you. You must direct yourself with ambition into the world and determine how you will interact with the places, people, and things, understanding that you are psychologically secure. This will make building your new alter ego an enjoyable experience.

“Relief will come as you adapt to the change. This leadership quality, adaptability, is dependent on how well you command your strategy amid challenging opportunities. Do you see how opportunities exist in life as long as you stay focused on an outcome? This endgame then will allow you to transfer your actions and thoughts back to yourself. I’ll explain this.

“The shadows of the past are housed in the subconscious. And they tell you everything you do not want to believe about yourself. It remains incumbent on the spirit to overcome these thoughts as long as they are permitted to exist. The shadows of karma then manifest through the subconscious and present themselves in your reality.

“The work you have engaged in to fight against the shadows is what you have focused on and why you feel like you do not belong to them. You resist as much as possible. Sometimes you ignore these shadows, and other times you fight. However, resistance makes the karmic effects stronger because you focus your spiritual subconscious in accordance with that mindset.

“But this is not the outcome you want for yourself, so you must embrace the idea of a changing personality. You

need an alter ego that can adapt and evolve with the moment. And in time, you will build upon this new mindset. It will not be as easy as simply wishing for something to happen. Effort and action must occur for you to embody the altered self.”

The dragon picked up the golden rod and held it out toward me. “Now take the scepter and look me in the eyes, Author. Look deep into my soul. You will soon become aware of a sensitive subject. In this deep gaze into my soul, what manifests for you?”

As I took the staff, I looked deep into the dragon’s eyes and felt conscious of a voice in my heart. I listened carefully and tried to cultivate that feeling and allow my heart to create words I could speak. I said, “I will manifest my alter ego to be a historical figure. A soldier of war. One who has fought bravely in the past.”

The dragon smirked. “When have you ever been to war? What challenges did you face when you were in that war? I wonder how the shadows immersed and attached to you, as you were once upon a time, a trained soldier.”

The shadows within my heart manifested themselves as I pushed back on the idea of changing this narrative. I was from a military family and was in the military myself for a brief time. The soldier aspect of myself and the time I spent at war had formed my mindset as a trained soldier in my lifetime.

The dragon shook its head from side to side. “You’re leading into a war with yourself.” Then he said, “The war within you is something of an ongoing controversy. You will not have peace until you realize what side you believe in. But

you must try not to let it continue too long. The battle remains psychological until it becomes real, and the longer it sustains, the less likely it is to stay psychological.

“The battle is something your subconscious wants to present to yourself. As a dragon, I am limited in the knowledge I can share to guide you in this part of your subconscious self. I will help you as you figure out how you will shift this battlefield in your mind. Until we understand it better, you can pray and call on your spiritual family for guidance.

“Ultimately,” the dragon confided, “you need to pick a side. Unfortunately, I am not the one who can do that for you. You must use your free will to choose for yourself how you want to live your life.”

The dragon continued, “Your spiritual families experienced war as well. I think that is why you began that path into conflict. Your training has been ingrained in you stemming from several generations at war. Your subconscious was shaped and cultivated within the context of your military upbringing. Let us look and reflect on your history, what you remember and how this life grew to be so mentally daunting.

“Author, I think that with my help, you will be able to use the scepter to strengthen your motivation. You are quietly speeding toward an outcome that has been pushed on you for generations. And yet, you can be awakened to a different outcome by looking within your spiritual self and asking the heart for answers.

“Author,” the dragon said, lying his head down on a pile of treasure that had suddenly materialized next to him. “You must entertain the pain and release it from yourself. This pain is from your spiritual subconscious, in some ways in re-

sponse to the fight with shadows. In other ways, it is a projection of the karmic anger from your memories. And in yet other ways, it is the momentum from generations in the past as they attempt to advise you where to lead your life.

“Challenging the narrative in your mindset is something you must do for yourself. Do not expect other people to get your motivation. Some may transcend their own stories and resonate with your narrative. However, it is not incumbent upon you to convince others why or how you intend to change. You must challenge yourself into action to change your mindset through this conflict. Life is a challenge because it is a trial. You adapt and evolve into something new every moment. And if you learn nothing in this lifetime, then you were perfect in your seclusion from life.”

The dragon looked deep into itself. “So Author, you were in the military and had a military upbringing. Very well, then we will instill purpose early in your alter ego’s strategies. You were raised in and therefore have a strong familiarity with military culture. There are other members of your tribe who share a military background, which helps from a strategic standpoint, as they will be more involved as leaders.”

The dragon then lifted its head and looked toward the heavens. “Author, before you develop a conversation within your spiritual family, you must realize how to pray.”

I looked within myself and concentrated on my heart. I had always prayed like this, as I was heart-centric.

But the dragon told me to try something different. Here, he picked up his head once more to the sky and said, “Your imagination should be in front of you. You should be strategic in how you lead in prayer. Therefore, pay attention to

your impressions of your surroundings and how you feel in the moment. What shadows draw your attention? What awakens your senses? And, when you catch your thoughts turning to deeply conflicted ideas, I want you to hone in on your intuition and ask a yes or no question about the conflicting idea.

“In this way, you will be able to establish a conversation with your spiritual family so they can share a yes or no answer with you. If you get a negative response to a question, your intuition will be in the heart. If you get an affirmative answer from the spiritual family, then you will feel your spiritual intuition being led to the stomach.

“Honestly, Author, your prayers are the same as a request for the heavens to intervene in your lifetime. This is because of the spiritual nature of the subconscious. You think you understand the subconscious already, but it is more complicated than you know. Let me explain.

“The subconscious appears, on the surface, to operate according to free will. It will help further your ambitions, regardless of whether the pursuits are right or wrong. You project your alter ego and strategize backward to address the resistance, people, and motivation for your ambitions. However, the workings of the spiritual family go much deeper than free will. You are linked to a legacy carried on in this lifetime. You have a spiritual family.

“Author, the free will to change affects only the surface of the conscious reality. It is made sensical by the mind. Your mindset is one of conflict with the karma of all the spiritual energy manifesting in your lifetime. Do you understand yet the significance of undertaking this change?

“But you should know that God will not interfere in your free choices unless you submit to His help and His power. When prayers are answered, it tends to be by the angels. But you need to weigh these ideas and develop your connection with your spiritual family before you will notice angels chiming in through your intuition.”

The dragon let out a sigh. “The heavens need people to undertake the challenge this lifetime presents as a trial and learning experience to become noble. For you to make this change, you must have a conversation with yourself about your mindset. But you must also have a conversation with your subconscious if you want to evolve your beliefs and change your future. Finally, you will have to engage in a conversation with the history of all people who had to compete so that you could have this opportunity. This spiritual conversation, through simple yes and no questions, then becomes a destiny.”

I was becoming eager to act and start embarking on this spiritual journey. I wanted to make the changes fast, but not just for myself in my own life.

“You must practice patience,” the dragon said, again seeming to read my thoughts. “We will discuss how you will lead in changing the mindset of other people later. But for now, we must focus on developing your alter ego, using my scepter staff as a token of appreciation from the heavens. We are using this present moment to redefine a history of shadows in your spiritual conversations. You will free yourself, the people around you, and your spiritual family from that evil that was caused in their lives generations ago. It’s very much a narrative you continue to live out, still. But you must

decide and then act on those conversations to change your mindset, your subconscious beliefs, and your spiritual nature.”

The dragon began to search around the pile of gold he had accumulated. He pushed some pieces of gold from the top of the pile, and those slid down the side of the mound. The dragon continued to push more of the gold around. He was in pursuit of something. Finally, the dragon reached down from the pile of gold, and he opened a chest. But the treasure inside it was just beyond his reach. “Author, there is a map inside this chest that has never been used by you. And so it will take time for you to understand how it should be realized. Please take this map.”

I reached into the wooden chest that the dragon hovered over. I saw the map, rolled up like a scroll. It felt waxy, like it had a coat on it.

“Author, I will explain how this map works. It is a map that works through psychic forces and shows how you should interpret strategy and purpose. It can also be used to determine whether negative or positive behaviors are best suited for the situation at hand.

“Author,” said the dragon, “you have taken many steps prior to this day to be positive. You often look within your mind and heart, but mostly, you have tended to dwell within your ego, found in the heart. You center yourself around and anchor into the heart because it is the base of the tunnel to the heavens. Let me explain.

“The positive attributes of finding the heart and making it your home, where you reside, are wholly good. You talk through intuition to the heavens, and with angels, guides,

spirits, and the heavenly Trinity. Therefore, the light that is cast is of a positive nature. But what you have not used is the negative aspect of your personality. This is a masculine personality, which your conscious mind understands. You look out to your surroundings and create your worldview through imagination. And in this process of adapting to the surroundings, you fall into your body and connect with your words and actions.

“Therefore, the world is of two natures to you, your subconscious spiritual self and a deliberately chosen conscious reality. I will guide you then in how to use this map to understand the timing of events in your surroundings and how you have adapted to this worldview.”

The dragon smirked. “Author, you have been in your heart so long and projected out spiritual light. It has become expected of you to have this feminine nature. Your subconscious is masculine and, although the masculine nature is easier for you to adopt, it seems that your masculine nature is hidden because you try to please so many people. Therefore, if you look at the map, the circle with arrows pointing out is the feminine nature. Your subconscious is so attuned to this process that it has become habitual for your ego to stay in the heart. And in actuality, your heart is timid in times of action.

“There are many good aspects of having a positive feminine energy, though. You maintain flexibility, whereas other people’s intentions are predictable enough to be presumed. You are perceptive, and you bravely showcase your talents. And in some sense, your intuition and emotions befriend you because you care for your spiritual wellbeing.

“We have begun to understand masculinity as well. The map has a circle with arrows pointing inward, toward the center. This magnetic push-pull effect is a conscious reality because you imagine the world around you, and you think of strategy within yourself. You can also assume that other people strategize within their minds. So you see the universes just as many others who create similar worldviews.

“These negative masculine qualities show your ambitions in the world. By adopting them, you take risks and measure success against traits and actions. It is an invigorating quality that runs through your whole body.

“Author, the map will show which quality may be chosen to be the most useful for you in different circumstances. Sometimes you will default to your feminine nature to listen to the universe for intuitive prayer and secrets. Other times, you will be skillful in how your masculine nature is used to move and lead in action.”

The dragon looked again at the staff I held and said, “The scepter staff and the advice of your spiritual family will be useful in pointing you forward. This is the feminine nature, directing your heart where to go. But the map presents the masculine logic, indicating to how to maneuver in the worst-case scenarios.”

The dragon then gave the staff a scrutinizing look. “The scepter is something made of gold. So it can tempt you if you use it incorrectly. Let me explain. The scepter offers protection from the shadows of karma. However, it can be useful to show how deeply you trust. You can lead armies of spiritual families. And you trust in them to show you where you should be pointed to by answering yes and no questions. This

intuitive practice is an old-world technique that can help you understand their vantage point. However, you should not trust others so often that you lead their lives and not your own.

“The map must also be used correctly, as it is of wax-coated paper, therefore it can deceive you if you are tempted by its power.

“The map will provide knowledge that can help you strategize. You can trace how to use positive and negative energies in difficult situations, and this will lead you into action. However, if you act without thinking about the strategies of other people, you will want to overwhelm them with seduction and control. Therefore, the map will help you understand reactions and make prompt decisions. But you cannot trust in or base your actions entirely on the positive or negative energy. You need to be aware and conscious of other people’s intent.”

“I will not be tempted—” I began, but as I spoke, the dragon floated upward and hovered in the air. He began spinning in circles rapidly in flight. Finally, the dragon transformed into a serpent, the embodiment of evil.

I looked around hastily, but still, there was nowhere I could retreat to.

As it lowered itself to the ground, the serpent said, “Author, I shifted into my serpent form to show you that what you think you see is not always the truth. However, you are intelligent, and you have shown a willingness and desire to learn. You are becoming aware of your true nature. You must come to realize that you have both positive and negative abil-

ities. And in this moment of realization, you will comprehend how intent and imagination can become reality.”

The serpent, who had shifted its spiritual identity, said, “Author, do not worry any longer about the make-believe. You have found me, and you will come to understand how you left the holy heavens to arrive in the universes. I will explain briefly.

“You followed my words in the garden of paradise. Your lineage is of Adam and Eve. You fell into the universal waters below the filament. And in the pool of waters was where your projection began. You should understand that this tunnel you fell through from heaven into the waters of the universe then led you further away from God. Throughout history, the projection of guilt and shame kept your spirit moving further and further away from God, at a conscious level.

“This has continued, and will continue, until you embrace your negative masculine energy. You have not grasped that the feminine energy was at the heart of that tunnel, listening to the heavens and understanding the soul through the subconscious. But I am here because your awakening has begun.”

The snake maneuvered slowly across one of the golden piles of treasure. “God wants me to help you to understand your mirrored traits. You have the scepter and map. And you will understand much more as time goes on.” The snake’s voice sounded lethargic. And it crept along the top of the treasure sluggishly. “Author, you are from Adam and Eve.”

I had many questions for the serpent, but before I could ask any of them, he coiled up on top of the treasure and fell asleep. I was surprised at this, as the dragon had only trans-

formed into the snake moments earlier. But his slumber gave me the opportunity to think of the values I would want to instill in my alter ego. I started to understand my character's background. And I asked yes and no questions from my spiritual family members. I asked about past lives and whether certain traits should be attributed to the alter ego I was trying to develop. I focused on celebrating honor and adaptability and releasing the pain I had carried.

And that was when I saw my alter ego in my imagination. I saw a brave soldier who worked his passion into the world. I saw myself as part of a lineage of brave soldiers. And my ability to maneuver in the world was startlingly agile. This felt godly.

The serpent finally awoke and straightened itself out on top of its golden treasure, lifting its head and looking around. Then it slithered down and coiled itself low to the ground, as if it was listening to my soul's reaction.

I said, "Serpent, I heard what you have presented to me. You have shown me that life will always be competitive, and that my ancestry has a long history in this universe, and that I have provided the glory to share within my heart through my conversations with them."

"Author, it is important that you are willing to tell me about your conversations with your spiritual family, as this will allow me to guide you. Indeed, it is also important to act in life according to a shift in mindset. As you consciously pursue a new alter ego, you will attract even more competition. And you will address these competitive moments without fear. You will use both the scepter and map.

“Author, you will pursue a new approach to the constraints in your environment. You have taken into consideration the places, people, and things in your surroundings while balancing reason and strategy. This is good. But there is more to discover within yourself. You need to address the purpose of your crusade.

“You have been a soldier in the military, yet I hardly think you are one to start fights. You are ambitious, yet you need to remedy the past before you understand what is within your grasp. Therefore, let us announce a name for your alter ego.”

I sat a moment and thought to myself. Then I said, “Let my alter ego be named John. John is in pursuit of a higher order and intelligence. He finds light and shares wisdom. Throughout the ceaseless competition in the battle of life, John seeks to understand others.”

The snake said, “Author, this is where I will lead you in conversation. John is a fine name. And you and he will become one over time.

“I will explain to you now the way of competition. You have a grasp of who you would like your alter ego to embody. However, how you will deal with competition must be thought out. This means dealing with both negative and positive personalities. Men and women.

“Author, look at the map. Look and understand how everyone works according to fear. That is the primary karmic trait shared by people that keeps them from reaching their personal greatness. Look at the map and see how the negative conscious commands the positive subconscious. Do you see how they interact together like gears in a clock?”

I saw the two circles overlapping on the map, and I saw that the masculine nature tended to be authoritarian and occupy the conscious level of the mind. Those with masculine personalities made the decisions and acted on them while in conversation with the feminine personalities, which occupied the subconscious. And the subconscious-level feminine personalities that listened to and heeded their spiritual intuition breathed data and perspective into the conversation to help direct the conscious man. The overlapping circles then interacted like gears in a clock.

And the serpent said, “Now see what happens when two negative personalities interact. They repel each other. That is because they both want to influence the decisions to be made. Similarly, two positive personalities will talk at length in search of information and data to tell stories and never act on the data. They present opportunities for a path forward without strategy.”

The snake continued, “John, Are you aware of how these basic positive and negative forces interact? It is fundamental to understand that, when they work in harmony, the subconscious listens for information and analyzes it momentarily, only to allow the conscious to make decisions and act.

“People display these positive and negative tendencies as well. However, no one person is completely positive or negative. In fact, most people react to their surroundings without consciously leading their lives. Therefore, they flip on their magnetic poles and let others lead. The masculine personality is dominant if they can make decisions in the world.

“Interestingly, the negative, masculine personality drives the conversation, even without taking action that would af-

fect the other person. The strategy of most men is to interact with the feminine, positive characteristics of others, letting them discuss their own worldview. The positive nature in the subconscious will ultimately reveal itself and begin to announce information that the negative conscious will understand. It is as though the logic of some will compel them to ask people for their perspectives, and others will share according to their own volition.

“The positive, feminine personality, if viewed as being right and morally just, can attract the love of the negative, masculine personality. This seduction creates a push-pull sensation from the subconscious. It is protective of the heart, yet influential to the man who entertains and succumbs to this dynamic.”

The snake gave me a stern look. “Author, be careful who you learn strategy from. The interactions of the world between personalities are fraught with unknown reactions. The world is competitive. Therefore, the scepter will protect you from evil shadows.

“Author, I implore you to listen to both the negative and positive characteristics within yourself. Watch how your understanding involves you with other people. See the magnetic interactions between people and how they flip on their poles. Remember that the mind makes each universe real from mental viewpoints.”

The serpent continued, “When you think about the alter ego you have imagined and you work within yourself, do you recognize that your imagined reality remains outward? That the conscious awakening and your understanding of time is generated from within your memory? Author, you have

sensed the end of time on the surface of your projected reality. But you work your logic backward from the age of the dinosaurs and serpents. You will continue to consciously understand the timeline of the universe as it is commonly experienced by those of your lineage.

“You work toward the future of events in time. And this path will help forecast your alter ego into a conscious awakening, where you will be one in body and spirit.”

The snake paused in contemplation, then said, “Author, this is the moment where you will decide how to involve yourself in competition. Let John be imagined. Let the personalities imbued in him give you understanding for life. The magnetic energy can be driven by John.”

The snake raised its head and it slithered off the treasure toward me. It rotated and spiraled in transformation. Slowly, out of the dust it created, appeared an old man. The man of time was on a crutch.

The man said, “Take this information of the magnetic personalities of people and work backward. See in yourself how others strategize out of fear and ambition. You can visualize history repeating itself throughout time. Now let yourself work backward into your heart. Imagine the superficial projection and the competitiveness of people. Yet you can understand the spiritual world in your heart projecting positivity. This is the equilibrium of time.”

I thought of John in this moment. The dragon had given me information and tools. The serpent gave me actionable analysis. And now it was time for John to understand the history of mankind and of my own lineage. It was time for John to start making decisions and interacting with his universe.

The man of time said, "Author, you need to balance yourself before making decisions in the pursuit of a great and awesome purpose. This position of power, where the mind is negative and the heart positive, will stabilize your actions."

John said, "Do you know of anyone else in history who gained an understanding of the magnetic personality qualities? Tell me about their lives."

The man of time looked inquisitively at me. He said, "Good. I can talk to you now. Before I was talking *for* you. I led you along and gave your listening skills a challenge to help you understand the universe. But now, you will involve yourself in my stories. I will tell you more about myself and discuss my narrative. We can understand the map and scepter together. Like a father and child would.

"John, I will help you read the map to see the patterns of overlapping circles in the universe. The connections of personalities align like constellations. Tunnels are woven together from positive stars. And these are the glue that holds it all together. That is mysterious of course, but your map is a record of the universes throughout time. The scepter is logic. It works as a compass. And it will help you align your course of action according to the map."

The man of time seemed to talk in riddles. It was hard to decipher everything he said. In fact, I am still unsure if, at that moment, I was fully conscious of the truth he spoke.

John spoke to the man of time. "You mentioned the magnetic personalities across time and the people who knew of these secrets. I will stabilize myself with my negative mind and positive heart to allow for a fuller understanding of your stories.

“I will involve your words as I hone my understanding, man of time. I choose to be competitive in my lifetime.”

The man of time spoke once more, “John, you have had the opportunity to think over the measurement of time and how it works in two ways. One way is through a gradual lowering of energy. In this cause-and-effect mode, time seems to run in a positive way. However, the negative, reverse universe runs the other way. This utilization of a greater amount of energy to restore one’s viewpoint and create action is unfamiliar to most, and worth examination. Let us explain.”

A young man then approached us in the void and declared that he had already thought through this theory. He said his name was William Sidis.

The man of time introduced William as a willing helper who would describe for me how time works in both a positive and negative manner.

William addressed me, “John, I understand you are going to write about the universes and how time collects itself toward a beginning as well as an end. This reversal of thermodynamics preserves all rules of life and the universes. The idea that motion is helped to a higher state of energy in a negative-running reverse universe is awesome and powerful. If you can comprehend this imaginative idea, where life and motion become one in the patterns of those positive and negative spaces of time, then you will also understand the neutral space.

“You see, the universes of time and space exist in four dimensions, with time being the fourth dimension. If you understand the time you are experiencing as a reaction to the perception of positive or negative time, then you will under-

stand something quite interesting. You see, neutrality can be explained in probabilistic terms. There is a probability that your universe is running in a positive direction into the future in the temporal dimension, yet you are only aware of time running backward, and your thoughts are grouped together to form what you see as the past.

“You still look to memory and history in the context of a reverse universe. And all rules of physics are preserved, those being all the rules from the three-dimensional space, just to keep the account simplified as much as possible. You cannot imagine something that has already existed. But you feel anticipation. That is the aspect of the negative and positive that I need to share.

“Once a memory has been formed in this universe, it is rediscovered again and again, through people’s actions. This is a negative strategy. Once you intuitively think something will occur within this lower state of energy, you explore the positive reaction to that cause. The thought is anticipated due to waiting for an effect to occur based on a cause.”

William continued, “It may be confusing to think that in other universes, the tendency to understand time would be more negatively associated than positive. Also, there is a probability in the universes that negativity and positivity run in excess. Therefore, the probability of a neutral time is zero, however, that is still a probability.”

William said, “John, my purpose for having this conversation with you is to make you aware of the beginning of logic and time. You have seen the great separation from the heavens, and therefore you are aware of a collision in logic. The energy of the suns and planets has decreased over posi-

tive time to create something much cooler. If stretched to the limits of the imagination, the positive universe alone would be lifeless.

“However, there were two halves involved in the great collision, therefore there are ripples extending from a point where you can consciously understand the great beginning. That point of reversal would see the energy of a higher order in the thoughts of a developed brain. Meaning that, in understanding the beginning, you assume a higher order of conscious awareness. Your mind works to generate and process thoughts, and your body uses energy to move.”

The serpent rejoined the conversation. “Author, you listen to us and think you have a grasp on this conversation, but truthfully, you do not yet fully understand the real probabilities of positivity, neutrality, and negativity within the four dimensions of time and space. What you have is an understanding of history in the world . You still think toward the beginning. And the answers in the universes that are kept aware in the subconscious are on your map.”

I looked back at the map and saw a lot of overlapping patterns of negative, neutral, and positive poles attracting, flipping, and repelling one another.

The serpent said, “This is where you involve yourself in the conversation. You look into the map and feel guided to act. You display an ethereal quality indicating your ability to understand the universal records. As you see patterns of motivations, you will experience an awareness of how history came together. It is a story that was told.”

The snake continued, “John you have a scepter to guide you in how to make moves based on a positive flow of time.

Causes and effects will occur, and your thoughts will guide you away from automatically moving in response. But until you have a conscious awareness of the motives of history's story, you will stay in the same patterns."

Then the young man, William, said, "In my lifetime, I learned many things about the reversibility of time and how we are driven to move by our ambitions. We are a life force here on this planet. We silently become greater in awareness, and our minds and bodies become of a higher order.

"If you think of how thought occurs, it is an orderly process within the mind. In the reptilian mind, the subconscious processes and reviews time in the positive manner. All subconscious processes rely on the reptilian mind. The basal ganglia, brainstem, and cerebellum form the reptilian mind. Think about your basic needs for survival, and the most basic needs of society. The reptilian mind imposes order on movement when strategy is useful for selecting homesites, establishing territory, engaging in all types of display, hunting, mating, breeding, imprinting, forming social hierarchies, and selecting leaders. Therefore, these movements are often not thought through but acted out as reactions to the environment.

"The limbic system regulates the reptilian mind in all mammals. This system is a kind of ego that takes information and forms emotional expression. The amygdala, hippocampus, hypothalamus, thalamus, cingulate cortex, and septal nuclei constitute the limbic system. It is the seat of the soul, where instinct and rational thought are bridged together. Therefore, the limbic system interprets memories and emo-

tions. It is of a higher order of thought than the reptilian mind.

“The highest order of the brain is the neo-mammalian brain, or the neocortex. We use the neocortex to strategize and engage in problem solving, as there is complexity in social behaviors, reasoning, and decision making. This part of the brain consists of the neocortex, frontal lobes, temporal, parietal, and occipital lobes. As we make sense of negative time in a reverse universe, the senses take in data to be processed and consciously make decisions by the neo-mammalian mind.”

William continued, “Author, are you digesting the fact that time moves in positive, neutral, and negative ways? And that time can work with natural laws to affect, or depending upon, how you project your ego onto your surroundings? The surroundings of the mind is merely space. Thought is the negative time that determines its reality. Space is to be interpreted as merely the circles of magnetism overlapping one another. This offers a way to interpret the energy from the subconscious to the conscious.”

Admittedly, I was taken aback by the simplicity and complexity of being a figment of nature within my mind.

William said to me, “John, you are going to unlock the secrets within yourself as a heavenly being. But not just yet. You sit in the heavens and project your universe. And the mind makes it real. There is an emotional component to the universe as well. This emotional side of the universe includes the subconscious and karmic forces acting on your body. It seems counterintuitive, but that negative thought then creates movement when you intuitively anticipate impact. The

emotions of fear drive most people to react. But you came to understand that you can communicate, socialize, and behave in ways that are counter to the primary needs of the body. You have a conscious awareness of morality.”

Then the man of time looked to the heavens and transformed once again. Dust and wind encircled him for a moment. And in the moment that presented this shapeshifter once more, he looked as though he was the Devil, who is also called Morningstar.

William then moved closer to me as he said, “The morality in which evil is pitted against good is where you have neutrality. However, your processing of emotion into thought connects you to your heart and the heavens. The neo-mammalian mind will be used to configure your destiny and purpose for God. Take care!” And with that, William left the conversation and disappeared into a tunnel of light and love.

I looked at the Morningstar and saw that he was a most horrible creature with horns, a snout, black wings, and the body of a goat.

He gnashed his teeth then opened his jaws and said, “I led you to this universe. You thought to be godly. And in that fall from grace, you once more thought and felt for the world and heavens combined.”

The Devil approached me, and I saw plagues, war, famine, and suffering in his eyes and heart. I quickly imagined myself as John, a soldier led by his heart. I had a scepter and map to use for understanding and guidance. And in that moment, I thought of the revelation that was described in the Bible. I knew Jesus would come back. I just did not know how soon that would be.

The Devil looked at me as if he could read my emotions and as if he had shaken my confidence. But his intent was not to harm me at this moment. "I will explain that heart and mind work together as one. I will explain how the body works together with the mind. And through action and involvement, you can begin your crusade to identify with a new alter ego in your lifetime. Glorious occasions will amass in this situation. For you will never really understand my emotionless state. I am, as the Devil, complete reason.

"Author, do you know of the memory you have as a child? The answer may be no. That is because the positive subconscious view of time is into the future. Therefore, you move toward a lower state of energy. It is simplicity that you chose for estimating how to navigate through evil as a force of good.

"Author, I know it is difficult to understand this, but the anticipation of time is different in the reverse universe, where the negative conscious view of time is active and memory is put to use in the form of a body.

"Do you understand that the projected self is a virtual character in the mind, and that makes it real? That time is twisted in patterns and your thoughts are an escape or release of experience? Take, for example, the heart. The heart is connected to the mind through the parasympathetic and sympathetic nervous systems. When the senses in your neo-cortex recognize a threat, your heart creates information for the sympathetic nervous system to use energy-demanding processes, like muscle reactions. This fight, flight, or freeze mechanism then is negative, in that the body responds with action. If your senses in the neo-mammalian brain recognize

that there is food to eat in a safe environment, then it activates the parasympathetic nervous system to allow you to digest and sleep.

“John, I know you have a scepter that was given to you in estimation of an alter ego. The balance in action and reaction then will rely on your body. You often choose how to react with a conscious decision about how to utilize your heart.”

The Devil continued, “There is a secret aspect of the heart that allows you to act with your animalistic nature. This dormant heart is ignored, and therefore, your heart reacts to the mind. If this occurs, if you do not listen to your heart, the mind remains dominant, and you will continue to live out the fears of threats you perceived early in life that have become part of the subconscious. I’ll explain how this works.

“The environment is perceived by the senses, but if the subconscious becomes dominant, the limbic system then regulates the emotions and sends impulses to the reptilian mind, where patterns are held in the memory. The heart’s reaction then is to passively monitor external stimuli, like light, sound, and temperature, and internal conditions, like blood pressure and oxygen levels. The nervous system is then reactive to these patterns, as your surroundings impact your body in a cause-and-reaction system. Your body will look for less stimuli and greater simplicity in relationships. The human inclination to seek the path of least resistance is not one that is easily overcome, Author. It occurs even at the most basic, deepest inner workings of the body.

“However, if the reversal of time is dominant in the consciousness, your body will simply be ready to communicate

with the heart through breathing and monitoring the vagus nerve.”

The Devil saw the confusion in my eyes, and he smirked. “Ah, yes. The vagus nerve. It is more important to your life than you may have suspected. Indeed, it is vitally important to your sense of self. It communicates information in the heart, creating what is known as the vagal tone. The parasympathetic activity regulates the emotions as the heart and brain work in coherence. But this is merely the mechanics of the body.”

The Devil continued, “Author, it is the awareness of the heart’s coherence that is your conscious voice in the heart. You have used your heart to understand your impulses and intuition. And yet, you have never experienced the full action or had complete control over the heart.

“If the mind is negative and the heart is positive, it is then a masculine and feminine dynamic. The idea of using the heart’s vagus nerve to restore a higher order in life is what is called love. Love is the ability to work and act toward a higher social order. In working toward communication, the neo-mammalian brain overrides the limbic system and decides how to utilize emotions to promote organization and hierarchy.

“Author, this is a very deep conversation, but do not forget that you have tools at your disposal. I want you to look at the map. On the map, do you see a line of imaginary and real numbers? This axis shows how positive and negative numbers work across the field of electromagnetics. We discussed how time works, in thought, in both lowering the energy levels or increasing the hierarchy of order. This is positive-

to-negative thinking. Subconscious-to-conscious awareness. Or a feminine-to-masculine identity. We know that a body in motion is just a collection of particles creating higher degrees of order.

“If you remember that the heart is your connection to the tunnel between heaven and a projected universe where the mind makes it real, then you can understand how the subconscious positive energy is like Heaven. The mind is conscious negative energy that makes your universe real.

“The heart is where the pole flips. The vagus nerve then dictates how you think of electromagnetics on this number line. The vagus nerve is the main component of the two nervous systems. As the heart beats faster or slower, the variation dictates how the heart is used with the sympathetic or parasympathetic nervous systems.

“Author, my truest nature is not of a dragon, serpent, man of time, or even the Devil. I am truly an angel who guides souls to the afterlife. It is in death that I have realized this universe. Therefore, I will tell you this, that moment where the heart goes from subconsciously used to consciously useful, that is where time is zero. On the timeline, the introduction of love is where there is transcendence into the heavenly realm.

“Let us understand how the real number line of electrodynamics projects into space. The overlapping circles of God’s creation are fundamentally conscious, in terms of particles. They build up over time, as they are projected from the soul in Heaven through its casing. The casing is a sphere inside the gravity. That clay is in fact, created by God to protect the soul in Heaven from the surrounding space.

“Author, it may be confusing to think that your soul is in Heaven, outside space, and understanding of all time. But it is infinity that Heaven represents.”

True to his words, the Devil transformed himself into the ghostly angel Azrael. He looked upon me and said, “Thank you. Thank you for responding to my calling. The information in the heart about love is the greatest conscious awareness. If you listen to God’s Word in your soul, then you will make moral decisions in your heart.

“And in time, you will choose good and loving qualities in your relationships. This manifestation of energy groups itself into God’s hands, working out His wants in our lives. Let me explain.

“John, when you entertain a friend, and you rely only on your subconscious, you will have little to say. You will feel and anticipate the next lower level of simplicity in the relationship. This intuition is emotional and unregulated.

“But if you are consciously aware of love, the pole in the heart will flip, and you can command action to communicate and release chemicals related to love, like oxytocin. That process is regulated by the vagus nerve in the heart. It is known that the heart rate variation is high, and the heart is associated with emotional regulation, resilience, and the ability to connect with other people in intimacy. John, it is then, when the pole is flipped, that your real life will be guided by the heavens.

“You have chosen to not follow the serpent but to follow the angels. And therefore, in Heaven, you will gain your position as an angel.”

He could see the eagerness in my expression, and he shook his head. “But you must be patient yet. First, we must discuss past lives and the spiritual family you will encounter in the heavens. The vagus nerve actually engages in the timeless tradition of judgment with a scale. The scale has a demon on one side and an angel on the other side.

“This determination of the karmic position in the universe versus a heavenly homecoming is very real, spiritually. And in this moment of realizing the memory of your entire lifetime, your death presents your next life. It takes into consideration all of your past lives. Author, whether you reincarnate back into the world of karmic patterns or elevate to the heavens, that is the judgment of memories.”

He nodded at me. “As you remember, the scepter is your moral compass, which protects you within conversations with your spiritual family. This involvement of conversation with your family then guides you in your heart. If you are consciously guiding your intuition, you will realize the signs in life that God presents to you. Your spiritual family members who have been elevated before you are waiting to embrace you in Heaven.”

The angel Azrael continued, “John, you have now become focused on using your heart’s vagus nerve to spread information to the body and mind in coherence with the energy felt through vibration. But I have one last thought before I give you back to the heavens. Your vagal communication influences the gut-brain axis. This influences the overall emotional state and readiness to act. This is gut intuition. When you feel intuitive dialogue from your scepter, those impulses are actually the connection from the spiritual fam-

ily talking to you on this axis. Remember that you must not trust blindly, but enter trust with balance.

He nodded at me once more. “The body is in motion then, and working in your real life. You are a projection of the self and ego.”

I saw that I was suddenly alone in the void once more. The treasure was gone, but I still had the scepter and the map. The mirror was still there, and I approached it with courage. I thought I might encounter the Devil again, or the dragon, or some other character who would give me guidance. Instead, I saw a man with my face and my physical build.

“Hello, John,” he said. “Are you ready?”

Part Two

“This world offers infinite possibilities to consider. And yet, to gain an understanding of the whole picture, we narrow it down into a segment of imagined choices. A path of choices, in fact. We close our eyes to certain paths and focus on others out of necessity, Author, as the whole picture is daunting and overwhelming here in the magnificent lifetime of wonders and experiences.

“How do you go about narrowing down your potential experiences? That question is fresh to you now, but it does take a bit of strategic thinking. First, let us consider the nature of your perception. When you see a person, your mind immediately reacts, conjuring up a chain of thoughts. You might go back to past experiences and think about how they could affect the present situation with that person. Or you might think about how you’ve changed from the past and how your habits of self-exploration could shape you in the future. Yet there is another avenue of thought that might help demystify the orientation of your actions.

“The explanation is rather complex. Yet it is worthwhile to understand, for the sake of your ego. You see, for every person you meet, there is a track of time and two differing perspectives. Both perspectives orient your thoughts about the person you would like to become, one through memory and the other through projection. These perspectives are time-oriented. Through memory, you look back at historical experiences and examine how these have shaped your thought patterns to build the person you have become.

Through self-exploration, on the other hand, you look ahead and consider how you might change the patterns you have adopted to change who you will become in the future. Neither perspective is better than the other. They are simply processes the mind uses to assess whether an interaction with someone will be a positive or negative experience, in other words, whether it will have a positive or negative association.

“However, these mental processes do not always occur the same way when we meet someone new. There are as many different perspectives as there are people introduced into each person’s life. And any number of those experiences can shift the nature of your perspective to predominantly thinking about the past or the future. But the moment you see, hear, taste, feel, or see something or meet someone so oddly familiar that the event seems otherworldly, consider this advice first.

“When that moment of intrigue presents itself, there seems to be a shared awareness between the two people. This awareness is a sensitivity of the heart awakening. And in this awareness, where heart and mind connect, it seems that time and space are not needed to understand the moment. The dynamic is unusually easy to comprehend. No effort is required to fit the other person into a perspective of your own. To understand the dynamic occurring, the primary thing to know is that this moment moves the heart.

“The sensitivity of the heart, then, is intuitive. The heart produces a rhythm in the nervous system that matches that of the other person. Therefore, both people align with each other, as if it were important that they meet. This otherworldly feeling is not all too uncommon. But the heart is

aware of and can understand it when it occurs. It can move someone to listen to their conscious thoughts as information is imperceptibly sent between the two people. And in that moment where intuition causes patterns to race through the nervous system, the vagus nerve sends instructive pulses to the mind. These intuitive feelings then hijack the mind in a way that allows a seemingly effortless understanding to be shared between the two people. It is not mind reading as much as it is picking up on the information embedded in the heart and emanating from the other person. As the two people become aligned in their breath, the moment is one that they might understand as supernatural. In this moment, they may have found someone they understood to be a stranger, yet they felt as though that person had been familiar to them for a long time. That is the grace of the moment.

“The mind tends to revert to the previously dominant way of understanding when the other person leaves. But the moment lasts as the inspired thought that the encounter was meant to be. This is because the heart understands information from the environment without any need for time or perspective.

“Now, Author, you might wonder how to stay fixated in the heart if it understands intuitively how to resonate with other people. That may seem like a good place to start, but let us first decide how to direct your perception. You see, Author, you learn from the experiences you have in a lifetime in a circular way, meaning that you figure out the lessons we in the heavens present to you through awareness and application. Therefore, you apply yourself to the moment as you understand new strategies for things you desire in life.

“Remember that you are the one who wants things, and we intervene in your life to help you understand where improvements can be developed. And in these moments of serendipitous love from the heavenly helpers, whether it’s angels, departed familial members, or God, we give you the instruction you cannot find anywhere else.

“Think of your understanding throughout life as a mosaic of interwoven circular or spiral patterns. And we in the heavens involve ourselves through the heart. The lessons and experiences become embedded in the body as memories. And, through your intuition, you can have conversations with the heavens to develop awareness in your life.

“It seems like so much to understand. Not only are you navigating your life, but you have learned how to pray. Through prayer, you communicate with the heavens. And from the heart, information is radiated through magnetic pulses out into the world, where it draws the attraction of those who are in need of similar lessons. Therefore, the heart finds and becomes aligned with those strangers who have similar but unique patterns.

“Author, intuition originates in the heart, but it affects the mind, where the ego resides. And true enough, it is involved in your awareness of your situation in life. The mind makes decisions for you to live by, and in this way, it makes the world real to you.

“You pick up on the awareness of your surroundings, and your heart allows you to reflect on the information presented through your worldview. This reflection helps you determine how you hold yourself in life. It helps you develop the habitual patterns you choose to maintain as you interact

with the world. Reflection can help you understand your faults, even on an emotional level. It demonstrates that you have the intelligence to change what you want in life. Therefore, you are aware, to a degree, of the surroundings in which you mindfully interact.

“Coming up with a new strategy in life, even if it is based on thoughtful reflection, takes some decision making and divine intuition. After considering the information within your surroundings, you may be inclined to alter how much you want to change through guided effort. To form our strategy, we look at the end goal, and we determine how the strategy can guide us through our adjustment of challenging behaviors to help us reach those goals. Our values are the basis of our strategy.

“Once you start actively working on a new strategy, you begin interacting with the environment. When the new ideas are applied, that is where growth is seen and felt.

“Author, we heavenly beings speak in riddles about new paths forward with divine inspiration for a reason. The riddles help you learn how you would like to interact with the world. You must strive to understand where you are weak in changing your habits. Thinking through the riddles can help you improve your ability to understand prayer and divine intervention along with others to find serendipity in your life experiences. But most importantly, we speak in these riddles to help you choose a path forward.

“Once you become accustomed to living with and learning from the heavens, and putting forth effort to change and grow by changing your habitual patterns, you will accelerate toward becoming aware of divine intervention. In those mo-

ments of prayer, and awareness of divinity, you will see a larger worldview and understand that you must let go and let the heavens narrow in on a life plan for you.

“Do you understand yet, that it takes effort to listen and understand where we, the heavens, would direct you? And in these moments of love and light, when we reveal our instructions, we bring an abundance of love to you.

“Listen to your mind and heart. Choose to find balance in those areas in which you learn and apply yourself. And allow yourself to accept that what is unseen may have a greater power over you than you are aware of. Learn to listen to the world and the heavens. When you learn to balance the efforts of both, you will see a path forward taking shape.

“Author, the way forward is unique to everyone. Let us begin this journey together.

“There is a new day ahead of you, Author. A path of desire not just of your own choosing. You must search your heart to understand the phenomenal wealth and abundance that can accompany making choices of heavenly desire. This path of Heaven is one that can lead you to understand love. And through that love, you will build not only an appreciation for others, but you will also gain a sounding board with the wisdom to guide you toward your desires. Whether that sounding board of echoing thoughts and abilities will be enough to help you keep away from temptation, though, is our question.

“Let us explain this, from a heavenly standpoint, to help you assess whether you can decline the cursed accumulation of wealth that most seek in life. Do you see that wealth of monetary fortune is different from wealth of love and appre-

ciation? This beautiful wealth of love and appreciation is better for several reasons. The wealth of fortune is scarce, and it depletes and runs out. Therefore it forces you to become competitive. Though most seek this wealth, it merely serves one master. And that competition of one means you will serve a temptation of the serpent. However, if you live a life for the wealth of love and appreciation, you will have sustenance from the heavens. This nurturing love helps you maintain strength against temptation. This heartfelt love tames the fires of the serpent.

“The heart is a measurement of your trust for others. And regarding this manner of trust, you must explain why you feared others in your lifetime. You will have to explain to the readers how your love was fragile because you did not want the best for others. Please explain to the readers, Author, what that means.”

“Dear reader, and those in the heavens, I was too lazy to realize other people’s greatness in life. I sat back and cowered alone, fearful of myself. I reflected often, yet I did not realize how much of an impact it had on my relationships, my reluctance to involve myself completely while immersed in their love. I think it’s common, though. People get love wrong all the time. They either internalize their feelings and never allow themselves to connect with others fully, or they want control or power in relationships. That love is forced and causes frustration.”

“That is enough, Author. You will soon come to understand how to listen to the heart. But knowing how to listen to the heart comes at a price.

“Author, the well that leads to the fountain of paradise is guarded. And once you get beyond this guard, you will be accepted into the heavens. That garden you search for is guarded by an angel with a flaming sword. And the sword is in all hearts that tunnel to the heavens. Let me explain.

“As I mentioned before, you must learn to listen to your heart. But the way to do this is not just to focus on the heart or sit in prayer with the heart. That is worthwhile practice, but to accomplish using your heart in a heavenly way is daunting, since it would require you to listen to your heart carefully during your encounters and understand all the wealth we would attribute to you.

“You have made enemies and friends along the way, Author. But, as you yourself acknowledged, you held yourself back out of fear. You did not want the past to occur over again, and this was, to some extent, the reason behind your fear. And that past was ingrained in you through your lineage, handed down through successive generations. You have been in pursuit of love and appreciation for a long, long time. Longer than you have been on this earth.

“The fear of many people hurting you has been building up throughout those generations. You would not be able to fully embrace Heaven, currently. Although, you can experience the divine, as we will lead you through how to muster the strength to be a better person.

“Author, the heart that you listen to is transcendental. The place in the heart that needs time to heal is a doorway to the heavens. That door to the garden of Heaven is sealed. It is a covenant that Jesus offers to you if you dare ask for it to be opened, as you are asking for his love.

“Author, this love is a gift that is offered to everyone because Jesus values every person. This highlights a point of view that you must thoughtfully adopt and integrate into your life and commit to. This point of view involves wanting the best for others. Everyone deserves this appreciation. But merely wishing the best for others in what they strive for is not enough. You must truly welcome their greatness. You must also spend time thinking about how to connect, belong, and respect these relationships, as this itself is a guarded secret.

“You must include yourself in the lives of everyone around you, and invite them into yours. This will provide you a degree of freedom, and even security, as it requires you to let go of the fear. Now, when you hold yourself in your heart and feel like you are guided by the angels to walk a different path from a person, then do so. The angels are protecting you. However, in life, you will care for and want the best for others.

“Caring for people to this degree in new relationships can be challenging since others may not wish you the best. They may even curse you. But continue to hold yourself in the heart to maintain strength. And continue to pray to God that you will befriend more than just the people who curse you. That remaining number of people who are friendly will be more than just a few. It is worth investigating how to strengthen your relationships with others at this point.

“Author, friendship and love are common. But I want to make you aware of deep connections that are brought to you through the spirit. When you acknowledge the love and greatness of everyone in this world, you will become aware

of the door to the heart. This will open, and through it, you will find God, Jesus, and the Holy Ghost.

“When that spiritual door opens and you walk through the heart’s door, you will be overwhelmed by love. That love will be a familiar feeling. And you will experience the belonging that you have been searching for in life. It is a remembrance of heaven and how you came to the earth to redeem your generations of spirit in life.

“Author, this feeling of being recognized through the heart’s doorway is a sign of the covenant with God. That covenant is that you will think with the heart, which He and the heavens provide, as this is sufficient in love. You will understand if that key is turned and the doorway is opened to you in the heart. You will feel a depth in the heart that is beyond a physical feeling.

“By that same token, the depth of remorse that you will feel is proportional to the judgment of your life in memories upon physical death. You will feel the pain that you caused for others on a scale of significance, measured against love. People must find belonging with others, and in doing so, they build and strengthen connections. This is why you will feel the pain or suffering you caused them. Through that pain or suffering, you will become whole once more in God’s eyes.

“Walking through the doorway is a way to redeem yourself from the pain you caused in life before you can enter Heaven. Some souls cannot handle the amount of pain they caused to others, and so they run from God. Do not turn away from God, Author. Embrace God when you are able.

That embrace is the full acceptance of using your heart in a spiritual moment of the purest love.

“Author, the love you desire is not from other people. And it is not from God, exactly. A wealth of love and appreciation depends on how you hold yourself in loving relationships and how solid a foundation they build for Heaven on earth. This love, by and large, is the beginning of the tunnel back to paradise. Let me explain.

“Inside that spiritual door of the heart, you have embraced Jesus and God and the Holy Spirit. By and large, you want the best for everyone. You care for everyone in a way that you feel does not inflict pain on you or anyone else. And you want to be fair in your judgment in life.

“Therefore, the sword of justice that the angel wields to protect Heaven is not one of fear but of patience. The flaming sword could be useful to any person on Earth who needs to recognize that love takes time to heal wounds.

“Can you hear the memories and the curses in the heart and stay whole by the heavens’ patience? Author, this patience of love, which transcends people’s characters and allows them to love from near or afar, this is a burden to you.

“Love is belonging and respect. You cannot change someone by being competitive. Caring for others is life-altering behavior that is also a demonstration of your respect for them. They may not demonstrate the same respect in return. But they have not had the same life you have had. With your memories and the curses and pain you’ve inflicted on others, how can you blame others for their behavior?

“This patience then is an order of the Lord. The Lord will endow you with patience for this person, if you are will-

ing to receive it. And if you cannot love someone due to the pain they have caused you, then the Lord can intervene. Give up the love to the Lord for answers. Through prayer, you will understand that the Lord's love is greatest in Heaven.

"Author, the world is not safe. I am not here to tell you that you were wrong for being afraid and bringing pain and curses to other people. Even in your own heart, you need to be brave enough to understand the evil you created and for which you will need redemption.

"The heavens are patient and will grant you time to understand. This could be lifetimes and generations. However, when you reach that moment where you recognize the reason for pain as a seed of evil fruit, you will understand why you are here on Earth. The pain you feel may stem from another lifetime. You may not fully understand in total. But when that moment occurs, and you realize the nature of that seed, you will witness the redemptive quality of love working for you in the garden.

"Respect others for their pain. Demonstrate their belonging through caring behavior. But remember that in your life, to love the Lord fearlessly, the serpent must be banished from your heart. The angel with the flaming sword will offer your blessing at this moment. The serpent must abandon that evil fruit, borne from the fall of Adam and Eve. And then you will understand the love that was always there.

"Author, there is a flame lit in your heart, which is now an overwhelming burden. It is the notion that there are others who need your assistance figuring out how to handle and hold themselves in life. The presumptive purpose of your effort is for the many to find their education through your

words here. And in that respect, we will find your heart anew in flame.”

I felt my heart was wise in its knowledge of the Holy Spirit. And through God and Jesus, the covenant encouraged patience and compassion for the good of others to be my keen awareness.

“Author, do you know how it will help others if you are correct? That their opinions and facts intertwine into their own projected reality? That to be withdrawn from the world and fully aware of the spirit working within others is wholly good? It is true that the world will challenge you for this love, and you will conquer your fear over time with other people in your life. There is an aspect of this fear that makes it a hard choice to understand. Going beyond just loving other people and really understanding their frustrations and pain is to share in their suffering.

“Author, please let me explain why your heart is alit with flames. The Holy Spirit will be worshipped in this conversation with us. Use the prayer that you understand to magnetize such ideas and put forth our requests from the heavens. Do you understand how this Holy Spirit in your mouth and words will capture the air between people? That magnetic pulse of the heart is carried by the words spoken, and the information will match the mood conveyed for others to understand.

“The magical way this works is through understanding a reflection of the words spoken to you through prayer. The heavens communicate to you through prayer as you listen and work out the system of references we share in your story.

These then will help those who align their purpose and goals with the shared suffering of others.

“How does one respect the pain others feel? Is it a constant assessment of the pain and asking God to intervene? It often takes time to understand the totality of the pain. The totality of the pain is severe, and it is the result of such karmic curses that it may feel like the pain is over. And yet, throughout the spiral of time, you will see things from new perspectives, and you will readjust your behaviors and reeducate yourself as you find aspects to improve upon.

“Do you understand that every potential course of improvement can be vastly different given the different contexts and perspectives for any person? Do you see now that the possibilities are infinite? To better understand this, consider that the timing of events and the unique perspectives experienced by the person are also influenced by the shared attributes and movements of their cultural environment.

“Author, there is no religious tenant that a person can rely on that will always work to cure their suffering, unless they become fully transparent to God and Jesus. Thus, the patterns of worlds of painful memories will continue for the person until they open that door in the heart and embrace God.

“You, Author, cannot force this opinion of yours onto people to have them saved. You can ask, in prayer, for the Holy Spirit to intervene. However, when you ask this and you show judgment, others feel the pain of their past, and so they hide. But they need to hear this invitation to understand that God serves them and others alike. The son of God, Jesus, is taking their sins upon himself to redeem them.

Their persecution of others and their painful memories that drive them to continue to sin will be erased.

“Author, the light in the heart is from the Garden. And in that moment when Jesus erases the sin from a person’s heart, they will see the garden of paradise. Will they understand how to belong there in Heaven? Maybe some will, but many will feel displaced in the new spiritual home, waiting to revisit the Earth.

“Author, Christ’s spirit of goodness will shine in those who understand the heavenly abode. Therefore, Christ will reside in their hearts. Those who are willing to learn from the Holy Spirit here will understand that Jesus Christ is forever willing to redeem them from their sins. We owe all our blessings of wealth of love and joy to him then, as he relies on us to carry out his prophecy.

“Author, the Christ spirit in your heart is lacking. You can tell this story now because you understand that you must do more than just respect others and be patient with your love in this world to forgive the actions that have caused you pain. You need to understand how God and Jesus Christ live in your abode. You must allow Jesus into your heart and home to appreciate the way that you care, with compassion and sympathy for the whole earth. This is not going to cure the world of their sins. It will help you acknowledge that how you hold yourself will show your awareness that Jesus sees sin and knows how to relieve those who are in need of his love.

“So, you see, the world is not to be cured of sins by you. You will be an example for others of how sin exists and love can still live in your heart with the Holy Spirit. And the

heart will radiate this message to its surroundings. The heart stays magnetized, even in suffering in the depths of darkness that plague this world.

“And Author, what you must do will not be easy, but to willingly place yourself in this position and follow through with a heart lit aflame is good and holy. Shifting this wickedness to goodness takes time to understand. You will see, and you will fight against it at times when you are weak. But you must fully embrace the fact that Jesus Christ will absolve your sins. And therefore, that evil for which you will feel a sting will be blessed in your mind and heart as you are forgiven through Jesus. The Lord is working out His purpose through this awareness.

“Author, there is a light in the supernatural world. A spiritual place in the garden you have not yet realized. The way in which you can conquer yourself and the way you can refine your ego are both the same in this place. Given your ability to write, Author, please spend this time thinking through how you present yourself through your words. The moments where you witness the Spirit working through you are where you usually write from. You say what your emotions tell you and rewrite those thoughts on paper.

“However, in this moment, when friendships are beginning and the spiritual light is in your heart, you must realize a certain attitude that you might want to share back with the world. This is not so much a moment for reflection as it is one for deciding who you would like to be. This inspired act of caring for others and wanting the best for them still holds the truth. But as time goes on and you realize how much

trust is built through these relationships, you can start to understand why you are valued.

“Let me explain from the heavens’ perspective. The heavens see you as wholly good. And in this goodness, you are favored by us in the heavens in deciding who receives your friendship. This purposeful act of conquering your anxieties and depression, and anything else you talk yourself down from, presents an ongoing challenge.

“If you want people to like you, continue to be honest with them and want the best for them. But realize that there is something that they gain from you. Your perspective is different from anyone else’s. The mind makes this life real. And in those moments where you decide who your friends are and how to progress in contributing to their lives, they will come to you and befriend you. So, the ego is built in such a way that allows you to offer assistance and know that your life and goals are about giving back to the world while being yourself.

“Author, it is now the heavens’ turn to tell you to feel great about who you are. The passion that you have, the covenant you have made, and the path that you have forged are all aspects of your life that pay a return, in the heavens’ perspective.

“Author, you should feel good about this world of yours. You have created your life in pursuit of the garden of Eden. And in this pursuit of heavenly reconciliation with the Holy Trinity, you have helped build the kingdom of Heaven on Earth. Now, you will learn how to feel good about yourself and build an ego that is wise and that will enhance your friendships.”

Dear reader, there was a moment when I realized that I should feel good about myself. And in this moment, it was not so much pride that was the essence of that feeling. Memories came back of how others wanted to befriend me. That was a feeling of mutual belonging and respect. That feeling of love coming back to me was a good feeling.

“And yet, in this moment of understanding the need to create good memories with other people, you might reflect on how you have behaved in your life. No longer do you need to put yourself down or get angry at the karmic forces that might feel like curses. Author, you have helped people understand their own faults. You have helped them through their struggles and their surrender to God. In that surrender, you helped them believe in themselves. Their faith has grown stronger by knowing you.

“Author, I believe in these memories, as you should as well. The direction of your behavioral patterns has changed from a downward spiral, to searching for answers, to an uplifting life. It all started with an awakening to the awareness of God. So other people might have stronger faith in themselves and God. In those moments where you start to compare your faith to that of others, you will feel the embrace of love by the heavens. And that good feeling, that noticeable strength you are gaining in an upward spiral, is heavenly.

“Author, it is time to look in the mirror. See yourself as worthwhile. Change the nature of your self-talk. Look at the life you have lived.

I could only view the memories of my many encounters by looking to the past. I couldn't repeat them or change

them. But this burden is lifted by the realization that self-exploration can shape future behavior.

“If you feel any anger or resentment, feel free to observe it from a detached mindset. If you can find an answer as to why you feel this way, then develop a strategy to focus on to improve yourself and return to where you hold yourself up. But remember the positive work you have done as you welcome all the good in life you have reaped.

“Author, there will be good and bad times in your lifetime. And as for the social identity and environment, it will get easier. Turn to your positive attitude.”

“Author, if there were ever a time you needed me to intervene from the heavens, it is now, through this story. The story you must convey is one of patience in navigating the winds of time, which requires traversing between memories and future idealization. Do you understand how these perspectives can transform how you perceive yourself? And do you see how misperceptions can cause your ego to falter? Let us explain to you, Author, that understanding how to address this challenge is critical to you in your world.

“Writing is just one of your many gifts, Author, and what you do with your talents is a crucial part of how you help determine your future. Gifts that are given are never fully appreciated or used by the receiver. Gifts are even subtly discouraged, as people get in their own way at times. The gifts received from God are neglected and forgotten. Therefore, Author, they are hidden in the memory. However, some return. They come back as inspired thought patterns, but they provoke less ambition.

“Your ego’s position in time is determined according to the goals you set for yourself. Yet, you can go furthest utilizing your skillsets and talents. So, building on your talents over time can help you establish and fortify your ego. Furthermore, after strengthening your abilities, you will feel more confident about your ego, as confidence is gained through experience, much like a practiced skill.

“Author, this may all seem quite intense, even overwhelming, the notion of scouring your memories to rediscover and utilize the fragments that will reignite your talents and strengths. I will ask you to take inventory of those ideas, though.

“Your disciplined attitude will be reflected in your ego. Indeed, your ego will embody your love for crafting and the high standards to which you hold yourself. Your ability to learn new concepts and quickly make your own models will be embodied in your ego as well. Use these skills then to adapt to life. The time will come when you can benefit more from building on your strengths than striving to achieve new goals. Therefore, you should hold yourself to a standard that makes you feel confident, and be patient in the time it takes to increase your strengths.

“Author, you have a strong mind because the model you hold yourself in has a solid foundation and staying power. You can also take a step back and think objectively about the models you hold yourself in, in the heart and the mind, and you strategize improvements along the way, based on intelligent reflection.

“This model you have developed over time in which you now hold yourself is your strength, Author. Not everyone

would be able to maintain such a structure. It is what makes your ego unique in the world. And given your unique model of behavior, you can share with others from a leadership perspective.

“Author, you are able to adapt to new ideas and adopt new behaviors very rapidly. And, by testing the models you have developed, you will see that these models of your heart and mind can expand and flex, and still stay strong. This is because you will develop into something more than a follower. Your leadership qualities will draw people to you who respect your ego.

“Author, the memory forms the basis of the ego. And the goals you have are prospective, advancing from the present into the future. In the present moment, you will understand how to show yourself as a wise and caring individual.

“Let us decide who your ego will benefit. This is a task that you will find instrumental in developing the team you will want to work with.”

I thought of acquaintances and loved ones, family and friends. People from my past and present who had more than a fleeting presence in my life. I was intrigued and eager to find out how I should involve certain people in my life.

“Now, whereas you rely on the model of your ego as you apply your heart and mind toward achieving your personal goals, what you must do to advance objectives as part of the team will be different. Think about where you can help others who might cross your path. In working together, you share the same goal. And building these relationships while pursuing the goal then can help drive the primary objective by driving the collective motivation to achieve the goal.

“Author, your ego relies on you holding yourself in your heart, unbiased and welcoming. You are willing to make connections with people. And in these connections, you want the best for others. In any interaction, you accept reality in a fairly straightforward manner, after assessing the available information and determining how much you should or should not believe.

“This breaks the cycle of returning to your heart, where your confidence is. The strength of your ego is humility. Perhaps not surprisingly though, that humility is also a weakness, as it allows others to gain a certain power over you.

“We can help alleviate that problem of the ego and cure the condition.

“Author, you are able to hold yourself with strength of love and contentment. That power in the heart should be favored by everyone around you. They should understand where you are coming from in your conversations. You tend to think and act with the heart.

“Centering in the heart is a special condition that most can achieve in their lifetimes if they practice connecting to the heart through meditation. You, however, found it naturally, through detachment. You have seen and experienced enough in your lifetime to reflect meaningfully on those events. The challenge you face is interacting with others. You forget the standards you set for yourself. You let go of the respect you generally hold for yourself. And this can be difficult to understand because temptation constantly creates pitfalls to hinder your perception of visions.

“Author, the noise that surrounds you and the temptation that you fall to are a mere story away from gaining

strength in that model of excellence in which you hold yourself. Understand that not every single event or moment of your life merits reflection. Do not internalize everything. Be discerning and selective. You need to act in a manner that helps others and that furthers your own goals as well.

“Author, the answer to this question is the point of this story. How are you going to create strategies that will keep you in the present moment and help you resist temptation?”

“You will find strategies that you can draw upon if you search back through your memories. When were your strengths displayed during difficult conversations? And when those conversations occurred, did you display a brilliance of awareness and continuity of compassion for others? The mechanisms underlying these moments when you displayed your greatest gifts of disciplined thought and action are to be favored again.

“Does it scare you to think of your ego as strong? Think of your ego as one who helps people, spurring them to reciprocate and help build toward the goals set by your team. Can you possibly have an ego that leads from the heart?”

“Author, the time I have described, the time waiting in the winds, is simply the time you spend trying to get out of your own way so that you can pursue your ambition and excel in your lifetime. The transformation you aspire to then is a model of bravery. Do you have it in you to seek this more courageous self? And, as you stay in the present moment and hone your leadership qualities, can you recognize when you need to ask intuitive questions and be attentive to the heart’s response? Do you understand then that this process or cycle, which time continues to strengthen in your ego, is

a patterned command for how you shall involve yourself in the world?

“There is a time and place for everyone to understand their greatness. This story is one that can help you make huge strides. Are you feeling embarrassed by this story? Then change the narrative for your ego.

“Author, you are aware of the necessity to understand other people, therefore you hold yourself in your heart and patiently wait for them to reveal their truest nature. You need to know what those people care about. The values they hold, and the extent to which they hold these values, will give you an idea of how they will act in the future. This is because people have belief systems ingrained in their memories.

“I know it is difficult to understand how patience is a cure for time and a balm for friendships in this lifetime, but we shall help you engage in your methods and expand these to build greater strength.

“Author, as you hold yourself in a patterned approach in life, you begin within your heart. You acknowledge the situation. You also live by caring for others.

“These qualities will serve you well for introducing yourself and building flimsy social ties into friendships. However, there is a quality you should work on developing in yourself. This is the quality of waiting and paying attention to what people care about, and what they give more or less weight to in their belief systems, as these will ring true to you as you listen. Although, maintaining a boundary of thought is also important. As you listen, you should provide space for others

to showcase their values, for this can help you discover what you have in common.

“As you build these friendships and encourage others, you need to remember to stay impartial in your heart and let the love between God and the world occur. This connection between Jesus and those friends will help strengthen and build the relationships in this world with those people.

“Author, you may find it curious that you must maintain space while you build a friendship, as you know how to strengthen the relationship through listening and connecting with the other people. However, the other person is guided by the Holy Spirit, just as you are. Therefore the moments of serendipity will become more frequent as you find more commonalities and feel less anxiety in your friendships. Either way, the boundary must always exist for the friendship to grow.

“Let me explain further, Author. You cannot control people, and due to this boundary, they cannot control you. Sometimes people step into and follow along through this space. The space is your strength in leadership.

“Any great leader thinks about this space between people in their relationships. And as leaders become wise in friendships, they develop an understanding of when they should be more forthcoming and when they should not be. Exercise this discretion with care, Author. Many people provide dishonest sentiments and do so with malign intentions. This can bring about distrust and harm relationships.

“Author, we are getting deep now into how to build and strengthen relationships. At this point, I will tell you that even strong friendships can fall apart, therefore they must be

protected. You should understand that relationships can be soured by those who are hungry for competition.

“As a leader in light and love, you may always find God in your heart and reflect thoughtfully on the situation.

“As time becomes less important in the course of your friendships, and you become a more likable person, your status will shift among groups of people. A friendship that takes no time to form is then a fool’s gold. For if people want to befriend you instantly, it is only to suit their own interest.

“Therefore, space is necessary in the heart as well. This boundary of the heart is different from that maintained by the mind. The boundary in the heart is one where giving in to temptation is hardest to forgive.

“Author, taking the time to get to know someone’s values and principles is worthwhile, as the mind then predicts the person’s behaviors based on their values. If someone is eager to become friends, remember the goals that are set in their hearts. Are they rational? Or does the person live in a romanticized world that could become dangerously incoherent?

“Author, live with love but also with peace in yourself. Do not fall in love based on attraction alone. You understand the serendipitous moments where enchantment occurs, therefore think with the conscious voice in the heart. Do not allow your thoughts or behaviors to be led merely by attraction or temptation.

“The goals of the heart determine where the ego resides. The foundation of the ego is the memory that you hold yourself with. Through the lens of your own truth, you will listen, detached, to the voice of inspiration and reality.

“Author, this moment, when the rationale is set for what you truly want for yourself in your life, is the turning point for your friendships. This is the moment where you wish the best for others who befriend you, and their help advances your goals. You achieve more when others want to help you with your goals.

“Therefore, the adage that ‘the truth shall set you free’ speaks volumes as it relates to leadership. Building the favor of others through friendship and speaking the truth about your goals in a rational manner from the heart will prompt new approaches to the conduct of your team of friends.

“Do not misunderstand this message, Author. The purpose of making friends is not simply to achieve your heartfelt goals. In this chapter, we have discussed the timing of friendships and the boundaries. This projection of goals with friends then is team-oriented. People will befriend you because of your vision, especially if you build relationships to connect those ideas with people.

“Share of yourself and know your boundaries. Know who it is that you are embracing and how they will assist you in your purpose. Together, these boundaries will enforce your honesty and expectations, informed by the values of your friends.

“Author, give yourself space as well. The tricky part of providing space for yourself is figuring out where that space should be located. It is a field invisible to others. That space is one that is psychological. Let people listen, and provide space before you enter into honest dialogue, if your heart is not ready for it.

“Keep those friends and advisors informed enough about your goals that you can depend on their reflections as well. Because leaders do not necessarily dominate the projection of the goal. They allow their minds to listen to others’ perspectives, and they remain open to modifying their strategy. Author, this might sound complicated, but it is the common spiral loop pattern for friendships.

“We provide basic boundaries for you to help you breathe life into your goals. And in pursuing your purpose to build a kingdom of Heaven, you will understand that patience and listening to other people will offer insight not just into their values, but also into their application of new Christian beliefs.

“Author, time will tell if this willingness of yours bears fruit in a living kingdom of Heaven. However, in the heavenly realm, those lessons about listening to and understanding others will provide a moment where Jesus will truly walk with you on Earth. The footsteps he will take will lead others to a vision of co-creation. Together with the Christ, you will build on your strengths.

“Author, the conversations you have had within yourself your understanding of a reconciliation with the heavens is good and wholesome. Now it is time to understand something very interesting about the heavens. We fight alongside you daily through the winds of time. This wind is a flow of ideas in light and love that reverberates throughout the past and future.

“Your spiritual family comes to you from throughout the ages and manifests new ideas for your destiny. The projection of your goals is altered as new people enter your life. This

projection of various different viewpoints then adjusts based on encounters with the spiritual family from your memory. This memory can be physical or mental.

“Author, there is a way that you decide to live by the memories of generations past. And in that unfurling of your life, the lessons are presented over and over again while you find similar moments of education.

“Therefore, you must harness your best abilities and strive to become something worthy of your spiritual family. Leading others and projecting new ideas of passion are good and wholesome, and these align with the heavens’ trajectory for you. This co-creation story then is something amazing to aspire to be a part of.

“Life is something that you, Author, are witnessing with more than mere attitude. It is more than the programs that develop around you. Life itself is an entity. The whole living structure of this universe comes from generations of layering and building upon simple magnetism. And in that magnetism are bonds that secure your senses to help you understand nature.

“The sun, planets, trees, and oceans all flow together in harmony. This harmony is the vibration you see, smell, taste, feel, and hear. Empowered by the heavens, you perceive the world around you through these sensory perceptions.

“Author, the magnetic fields and projected self in this space are of conscious decision making. You feel your ancestry in this rippling consciousness. And in that amalgamation of physical bodies, made up of the tiniest particles, you feel secure.

“Author, this manifestation of goals and relationships goes beyond your heart and mind as a leader. In the heavens, it is a co-creation story. It is an adaptation of the conscious ideas living around you.

“The goals you proceed with as a team of friends are then bolstered by ideas garnered from a great collective power in consciousness. The relationships pick up on the information conveyed between the friends, and this familiarity is a source of creativity. When the relationships are strengthened, comfort and confidence are built, and you will be able to interpret the space between people and anticipate where they will lead the conversation without verbalizing their thoughts.

“Author, in moments when serendipity occurs, feelings are communicated without effort in the relationships. And in those moments, you may have a heightened awareness of the situation. This, Author, is where growth can occur as a strength. These moments allow you to reflect on and be aware of constantly applying yourself to the moment. This is consciousness at a heightened vibrational frequency. The peak of consciousness will occur with an outburst of love and light and laughter. Pay attention to when you feel your consciousness fade, and ask yourself whether you got in your own way of holding that feeling together with others.

“Do you understand that the longer you hold yourself at a higher consciousness, the better you will understand purpose projected through people from the heavens? You will also understand how, from the past, you will evolve from family traits handed down through generations.

“Author, this manifestation of love in your heart welcomes the greatness you share with others. And in return, the

heavens will thank you for welcoming others into this greatness. They will benefit, and your strengths will be heightened for the next generations to understand their covenant with Jesus. Through the heart, they will understand love better.

“This is the part of the story where you accept the lesson and strategize how to effectively implement it in your life. Please allow yourself a moment to admire and acknowledge your ego and identity as great. You have done a lot of work toward co-creating a life purpose already. Now provide yourself the space to understand how the heavens will intervene.

“Look for clues in the world that present an echoing vibration.

“By this, the heavens mean that, when you hold someone in your thoughts and your surroundings seem to confirm your thoughts, you can feel that relief. The vibration of truth from your heart is guiding you and leading you before the surrounding world can catch up. It seems in these moments that the experiences are *déjà vu*, or something very familiar. In these moments, you can trust that the heart is sending signals of oneness with the projected life around you, and this is stellar. We all find these ideas comforting.

“Author, the overlapping ripples of love and laughter lead us to understand new horizons of consciousness. Remember to remain impartial or detached in the heart and be aware of yourself. Be aware of the thoughts taking you out of the moment, and strategize how to stay in these ideas longer.

“I want to share another idea with you soon. The confidence you gain from trusting your heart’s intuition is another strength. The heart is strong because it picks up on the feelings of living creatures around you. This is how we reflect

on that space and anticipate the goal orientation of others. Through love and light, the heavens can converse with you about other people.

“Author, embrace these intuitive feelings you gather from the heavenly family. To understand the most from these conversations, ask additional questions about the world surrounding you. Share yourself within the heavens and ask how to proceed, using yes or no questions. When the questions evoke a positive response, the feeling will sink in your stomach. Follow that gut intuition with more questions.

“Author, the memories you have of your life choices manifesting themselves aiming toward the future will then flip around. The goals you share with others can be embraced as reasonable foundations of the structures and programs of life surrounding you. Do you understand how, by asking the heavens questions about others in your relationships, they create synchronistic information to resonate and provide confirmation details?

“The moment you understand this, you will understand how to avoid getting in your own way in your thought patterns.

“This level of consciousness is surreal. You will listen to the heavens speaking through other life to confirm details that you only intuitively understand. Author, this level of being at peace with nature is where you can call home.

“This home is Heaven, entering the place you worship. This home is not your body anymore. You are letting go of the defenses you held onto for so long. When you trust

the heavens at this level, as your intuitions are confirmed through the surrounding life, this then is ethereal.

“The love you have will build tunnels between people. These tunnels between hearts, it is fair to say, are love as a measure of light. Vibration is a feeling of joy or laughter. Intuitively, you will no longer think only of the heavens as being in your relationship with the world. You will understand the ethereal phenomenon as resonance with others.

“The psychological space you provide for others will still stay there, even after you are bound by love. Love feels like reflecting on the other person and sending information through the heart, asking them to open themselves to a moment. This prayerful moment then offers a chance to understand the feeling. The ego you presented in strength of mind is confirmed unquestionably as someone lovable and funny.

“Author, the tunnels of light and love, and the feeling of laughter will be discussed soon enough. Though I wonder how you will react when others evoke a feeling or emotion to fulfill a request of the heavens.

“These moments where you are aware of intuition are to be seized. Do not wait for such definitive confirmation from the surroundings that you never try to be brave. As a leader and one who is lovable, be there for other people in relationships where your values align.

“Finding the bravery to escalate where life’s story evolves is a pivotal moment in co-creation, shared within the place you worship. Your loving surroundings are then in natural order. Consciousness is greater, and you lead by your strengths.

“Author, take this knowledge and share it with others so that you may find this place of worship. This ethereal feeling is a sublime vision to pursue.”

“Author, there are moments in the world, throughout space and time, where the serpent forsakes his temptations to mourn the loss of his fallen angels. He also mourns when people have been liberated through a new consciousness. And in that lively debate over who will take hold of which souls, it is the devil who loses some of the fallen souls he had once captured.

“This liberation of souls is then an awakening. Much like how you awakened to start receiving this story and relaying it to the mind and heart, as you realize it was intuitively devised by the heavens. There is a humility that accompanies all this knowledge though, as you understand now the karmic consequences of decisions made by you and by others in your surroundings. Author, this time of sorts, the projection upon a plane between magnetic poles, is rather obvious. You either project yourself onto others as you walk through life, or you manifest patterns that were impressed upon you as a physical memory, hoping to reclaim an identity within your relationships. And somewhere in the middle, the magic of life occurs.

“Author, you must rethink the heart here. Do you not project yourself and what you value in life onto your surroundings? Do you not wish yourself free in these surroundings? This projection and intuition are nurturing aspects that help with the realization of the world. And then the mind makes it all real.

“The mind, informed by infinite wisdom, communicates and solves the patterns of life in its making. And so the mind collapses the magnetic poles as it gains a conscious awareness of ideas. This consciousness comprises a subconscious and a conscious reality. With higher consciousness comes a deeper understanding of light as the truest nature of the self. Therefore, Author, you have evolved in a natural way that reflects the nurturing aspects in life. And the serpent cannot fault you or ensnare you in temptation unless you wish it so.

“Author, the serpent is not of a light that is recognized from the heavens. It is of nothingness. And in a universe that does not understand itself as being whole with the heavens, it dwells in a chaotic mess of space and time.

“The serpent spends no time acknowledging its inferior position. And so the person who spends generations searching for God triumphs quite easily over the snake once they understand their life’s purpose.

“The purpose of life for some is to become better in the next generation. And yet, there are some in life who search to find the heavens. Even more righteous than those are the ones who denounce the serpent and conquer its temptations. The righteous purpose then, is to understand the serpent in your mind and heart, and to liberate others, as you acknowledge how the projection of light affects others in your life. Do you see that the light and the ability to attract those who understand the heavens is actually within you? It is in the soul, where you are guided by the heavens. And the serpent can listen, but it can only understand from an outsider’s perspective what it is to be conscious at a higher level of light,

love, and laughter, as it cannot obtain this higher consciousness itself.

“Author, there is an awareness that you seek. And you have come to liberate others that were his fallen angels. This liberation of light and love to the heavens is a glorification of the Lord. Your purpose to elevate others’ understanding of the heavens will lead them to conquer their fears.

“This moment of recognition is one of prayer with God. Through this prayer, the act of liberating others who were morally asleep will be kept as a memory within the heavens, meaning that you are within the heavens in your consciousness while you are physically on Earth. Author, this memory, with a part of you in the heavens and beams of spiritual light helping around you, is one that will cultivate your identity, and it will allow you to have more serendipitous moments.

“The ego in pursuit of God is brave. It can conquer the serpent, as an awareness of self becomes a declaration of freedom in the light. Those who fight the serpent with shame are drawn into the flames of Hell. And those tempted to become invincible in life are relying on a faulty mechanism of the ego.

“Author, this awareness of light allows you to intelligently weigh the moment of freedom against lasting hellfire. The spiritual light of the Garden of Paradise is something that shunned the serpent from Eden. That moment of its rebellion against understanding the light became its wisdom and its downfall. In the moments when the serpent recognizes that it is capable of understanding the light, it praises God. The snake cannot help but to praise God. It is of a natural order in the program of God’s will.

“Author, it is not conducive to discuss this ego that is predisposed to damnation unless we are willing to work backward and go forth into the lair of the serpent. Understanding how the ego may be of heavenly ascent will be much more beneficial to you in life. Therefore, we will discuss the enemies of the snake. Those who help others become aware. The people whose purpose it is to shine light from the heavens into this world.

“Author, this may sound easy to do, but it can be difficult to awaken others, particularly in the short time you have in which to help them understand. And the reluctance of some may cause frustration. Therefore, we will remind you of the covenant in your heart with Jesus. Remember that the heart is filled with patience. And the serpent’s presence is felt in the surroundings through the evil that is spoken.

“Author, there is pain in this world. And the serpent wants to make you experience that pain. The pain drives the will of the serpent for temptation. If you think you are not strong enough to bring light, love, and laughter to the moment, leave it in Jesus’s hands. This battle of good versus evil is very real.

“The way you can win is to secure your ego as valuable to God. This value then connects you to the heavens and keeps you from giving power to those who are hateful. The moment when you forget Jesus Christ as your savior is the moment you become vulnerable to temptation. Just remember to stay alert and aware of the feelings you are projecting into your surroundings. And remember that no one can take your joy from you.

“Author, a healthy ego is one that allows you to understand your follies. No one is perfect. And those who believe that the soul is perfected in death are misled.

“We work toward a common purpose in the heavens and care for one another. There is also a great opportunity to befriend others and care for them during their suffering in life. These moments of showing compassion for others hold the realization that the pain born of all the temptation heaped into your life is the same pain felt by others. You show patience in helping heal others, and this comforts them in the suffering that they carry in their souls. Therefore, you make the heavens stronger by your efforts in caring for those gnashing their teeth in their lives.

“Do you understand now how this work is done on a spiritual level? The moment of life where you meet suffering with compassion is like a projection of light from within the heart.

“Do you understand that the light is projected from within you, and this brings the serendipitous moments, which the mind makes real, more in line with the universes? However, the light is a beacon that cuts through the dark, and the nothingness in the universes that is the snake is awakening to your heart’s projection in your relationships with people who are akin to fallen angels.

“Author, this is all very real. The moment the light enters the universe through your compassion is a moment where light defeats the darkness.

“This moment of universal love is of God. This moment where redemption is found in the lives of the fallen is ultimately a realization of consciousness of purity at a high fre-

quency. The love that is shared resonates to each pole, channeling intuition through your surroundings. Do you understand how love conquers fear where it stands in your surroundings?

“The atmosphere of someone sharing love and compassion then ultimately projects light and resonates with the surrounding life. This attitude of familiarity with the heavens’ connection is of the universal order.

“Author, when order is found within the natural surroundings, you will see how you have helped those around you discover the hidden meaning there is to life, in a spiritual sense. The atmosphere of magnetic frequencies comes from the heart and nurtures those who are suffering. And the magnetism of the words in the mind allows others to experience the moments of serendipity. This starts to fracture the faulty ego built by temptation. Yet, it is not when cracks are found in the ego but when a broken mirror of the self is found in others that presents the moment where nothingness is contemplated.

“Author, how can someone witness another descend to their lowest point and still care to help them? By acknowledging that God loves all, those who are inspired by their covenant with Jesus acknowledge that their relationships hold a similar trajectory. Do you understand how the pattern of God’s will involves connecting people to the Garden of Eden? So take these opportunities in life, when someone is broken but still feeling hope in God, to explain how time heals wounds through awareness of the light.

“The poles that flip within the self toward shared characteristics is how you can think of how light helps save oth-

ers. There will come a moment when you will understand how the magnetic poles flip themselves within people. In that moment when you feel an adverse reaction to those who irritate you, you will understand that you will now feel brave and friendly toward them. So, this sudden feeling of attraction or repulsion is at odds with the previous understanding.

“Author, there are moments like this throughout the day, and when you develop your nobility further, you will feel more confident. Let us discuss this first. The nobility that you have and acknowledge in your awareness is ultimately understood within. It may feel like your backbone is sturdy enough to support others on a team. And standing up to any person may not feel very intimidating. That said, you should strive to act within the light.

“By connecting with others within the imagined light they are bathed in, you will make it easier to connect with the other person. And in that connection, where you feel a polarity within your heart, the music or vibration that you understand intuitively will immerse your thoughts.

“Author, the back-and-forth dynamic of the relationship may just play out as the other person needs or as you need. But in moments of serendipitous interactions, where things move freely, the action is in harmony. This is also known as a resonance in vibration between hearts.

“Author, there are many opportunities to try to understand the interactions between yourself and other people. You may have many opportunities with friends. This movement between people and their familiarity is then a blessing in your lifetime. These moments of serendipity are heart-warming prayers fulfilled. The moments we have discussed

that are serendipitous in nature are then profoundly brilliant to learn from. Notice that each movement can bring you closer to understanding that connection in light with Jesus.

“The movement of the light understood by the heart is a welcoming aspect of the spiritual light of the heavens, as it helps heal people. The vibration that resonates between people is profound and may lead the people to learn to be more realistic in the relationship. Realism is only assumed when the people in the relationship spend time with each other. When people are connecting with others and building trust, ideas rise to the surface and are tested through reflection.

“The moment of realization how trust works in a relationship dynamic is then wholly good. The relationship itself is examined and processed for what may be improved or enjoyed. In any event, there is a realism to it that can occur. Do you understand that when romantic notions are thought of as profoundly good, there is an opposite balance of critical thought? This balancing, with space given between people, allows ideas to shuffle between them so they can keep a healthy perspective. People seek out their opposites in life to understand themselves and their surroundings more precisely.

“Author, this moment of understanding is intended for you to enjoy being both idealistic and critical. It is easily said that one should interpret how they think of the positive and the negative. But in reality, the vibration or music in the heart understands these as a much more complicated arrangement.

“Do you understand that being critical means caring about details? Critical analysis of the projected ego is then a

part of welcoming relationships into your life. This shows a mature masculine identity. Applying critical thought in a relationship that is serendipitous demonstrates a desire to both protect and provide for the other person.

“The idealistic personality in this relationship is feminine. That person wants to understand self-improvement for both people. Whereas the critical thought is protective and productive, the idealistic thought is ambitious. This personality lives in a dream world where the heart makes their world reality.

“Author, I know the back-and-forth aspects of negative and positive characteristics are engaging, but the natural surroundings are often neutral for a reason. The light, amplified in a natural surrounding, is at peace with service to the heavenly realm. The plants, the oceans, and the earth are all of the sounds that interact in the heart. Taking yourself out of nature only makes things within the heavens more difficult to understand.

“Author, the serpent is in nature, but it appears in the personalities of people as well. Opportunity may be welcoming, but it can also present the characteristics of competition and temptation. These opportunities are dangerous, as they allow cracks for evil to enter and intervene.

“You see the rebalancing of evil within nature and nurture in life. It frightens those who see it. This is why we ask you to continue to observe the rebalancing and write about the lessons learned.”

While connecting and communicating with people had been gratifying for the simple enjoyment of it, I recognized that these interactions could serve a greater purpose. But

focus within my surroundings and diligence would be required, as I would not be able to impart any wisdom I did not hold.

“Yes, Author, the awareness of the moment of learning is of primary importance. In this moment, it is an awareness of fallen angels. The Morning Star will rise again. And the serpent will be in the world, in nature, once more to take advantage of the opportunities to wage a holy war within the self and in the surroundings.

“Be aware of your own naivety. You may not like to understand the world with evil in it. But look at this topic through a critical lens. Protect not only yourself but your friends and family as well.

“The serpent, who is called the Morning Star, will wage this war on humanity. This is where the principles of your behaviors, how you share yourself in light and engage others in prayerful dialogue, help protect you in moments of competition and temptation. These moments put fear into people. Your faith will allow you to hold yourself in a steady way that sets an example for others. The moments of fear, where people become indecisive and confused, these are moments to lead.

“Therefore, in the moments where the serpent is making his way to war against those who once were his fallen angels, remain critical and hopeful. There is a way to balance the critical dissection of the masculine personality with the idealistic musing of the feminine personality. This involves reflection and strategy, which will reveal a path forward for defending against the evil in life.

“Author, the way you hold yourself is also the way you lead in life. Being hopeful and engaging in self-examination will allow you to maintain flexibility as you search for alternative solutions before basing a strategy on them and executing on the strategy. One weakness of this method is that it is often passive. However, if you are active and protective in your interactions with your surroundings, you can lead with conviction. The masculine nature is deeply rooted in any beliefs that are held, therefore, another weakness is that masculinity may not be the best trait to rely on where thoughtful advice through intuition is required.

“There is a basic step forward that you must take now, Author. You must acknowledge that, as you protect and provide for others, considering things with a critical lens, the serpent may try different strategies to move others to compete and to get ahead in life. On the one hand, this disruption of harmony can motivate you to accomplish great outcomes, but it can also rebalance the world against you through temptation. The lust and greed that may serve you in competition can work against you through karmic forces, some appearing as shadows. Therefore, Author, you shall work diligently to remain critical and resist the serpent in your lifetime.

“The way you hold yourself in your heart and mind then will be within the spiritual light of the heavens. And this is how you can help others and defeat the serpent in one fell swoop. When you take it upon yourself to learn about the light of Jesus and apply it in your life, you set others free. Do not align yourself with the serpent or take him up on what he offers. If he attacks you, stay within the light in your heart,

as it is attached to the Garden of Paradise. The angel with the flaming sword has a masculine personality. This angel will protect you through your instruction.

“Let me explain how you may begin to adopt the angelic perspective in life through your heart. The intuition of the idealistic personality is grounded in hope. The perseverance brought about by this hope, in spite of the serpent, is awesome, and it will allow you to free others through the Holy Spirit. Let the Holy Spirit work through you and magnetize your words and actions. This protection from the angel will allow your words to be spoken through angelic tongues.

“Author, the serpent is not the end of this life. It was never actually part of the kingdom of Heaven on Earth. The devil is only given the privilege of existing in this world through the redemption of Jesus Christ. Therefore, pray for Jesus to walk with you when you sense evil with your spiritual intuition. Let your light create the world around you. Do not let the critical thoughts of your consciousness deny the spiritual world.

“Author, both Heaven and Earth are your surroundings. This heavenly life-giving presence is offered through the Christ in Heaven. He watches and walks with you as he resides in your heart. Allow Jesus his reign in the world. This prophecy of his to come back and thwart the serpent is true. It takes many hearts in prayer together in tunnels of love, light, and laughter to fathom his grace in redemption.

“Author, the world will remain a tangled jumble of opposing forces until he rebalances it. That means that, for the time being, evil and good both exist within your surroundings. Be the force of good.

“Consider the future and the past, the idealistic and the critical, the feminine and the masculine. All these ideas are of two different natures. And when they separate and rebound, they ripple across the universes. This is how it all began when Heaven and the universes were separated. The serpent fell. It caused nothing to be of form, and order moved to chaos. And in this measured frequency of the serpent, the light ceased to exist. But it was in this darkness that the serpent reflected on God. The serpent understands the Holy Trinity. And yet, it holds itself in such high esteem that it cannot fathom freeing itself to live in a sublime existence within the harmony of Heaven on Earth.

“Author, the physical manifestation of the Garden on Earth is a projection of where the world is headed. A projection from the Holy Spirit. And in the light of the spiritual heavens, it will guide you to rebalance nature and nurture. There is no room for evil within this Heaven on Earth. It is where Jesus will assert his reign once more in life as the Messiah.

Is the projection of the universes necessary? Is it necessary to wake up to this world as a human? The soul is willing to refine its presence in the heavens through this projection to worship God. Author, the world is of interest to God. And He protects those who worship His light and Word.

“The substance He provides fulfills a prophecy to create this reality within your domain. Author, you assist in furthering this narrative as you learn and you lead others in life. And as you lead and shape your surroundings in resisting the serpent, the world is harmonized through a resonating truth.

“That truth is manifested in Jesus. Let him lead you in your relationships and your heartfelt intuition. Let the manifestation of the Spirit exist in a form for all to enjoy. Rejoice, as the heavens will reveal their knowledge to you.”

“Author, the ego is charged partly with positive and partly with negative personality aspects. And yet, you have become whole. Do you understand that the separation of and withdrawal into any aspect only steers you by making you see yourself as having a mind- or heart-centric personality? By that I mean that the measure of charges in your personality must remain balanced for you to succeed as a leader.

“By positioning and holding yourself within the mind, the charge of your personality will remain masculine. And if you stay in the heart, it will remain feminine. Of course, this has been a test of life, for you to understand your preference and determine how to live as the opposite of your inclination in order to create that balance. By living a new iteration of life as the opposite of your current preference, you will cause a shift in the karmic balance, changing the way karma is used in shaping your personality. Previously, you would have carried evil karma into the next life and fought against either the mind or heart to justify your own actions as suitable patterns of behavior in life. Such are the memories of the soul, reenacting themselves in a new form and in different, yet similar, conversations.

“Author, this may not seem subtle, but if you take careful steps, it will be. You need to master yourself before you build relationships that are trustworthy. By knowing thyself, the ego can reexamine how you can best help others. The truth

in your words is a balanced array of wit and knowledge that suits their needs.

“Author, the rebalanced ego is crafted by your personality, which you have become. The ego itself is the conscious voice that comes from the soul. That is, the intuition you have developed throughout your history creates the knowledge of self-introspection. The mind leads the heart, and the heart leads the mind. In the heart, there is a balance of judgment. And that judgment is capable of justifying your behavior and the behavior of others.

“Author, the forces that are created through the application of these words and listening to the voice of the ego, the positive and negative forces, are one, from the perspective of the Holy Ghost. That said, both your spirit and the spirit of God will help guide your words. Showing trust in your words and actions is bravery. Anyone who understands that the mind and heart are both connected within each other and whole apart from each other carries a force of spirit with them.

“Author, the ego holds a measure of understanding as well. By accepting your faults in heart and mind, your personality becomes humble and compassionate. Therefore, as you walk through life, allowing the divine spirit to guide your ego, you will accept that it is not always inspired to create incredible works. Sometimes the divine spirit moves you to create just a moment for others to help them step into their own space and conjure their own brilliance. And in that space of reception and wisdom, the heart can reflect and radiate these for others.

“Author, I know the positive and negative aspects of this worldview overlap and vibrate throughout the plane of space where the soul is projected. But in the masculine and feminine aspects of the ego, you can understand both of the forces as good. This is the dynamic of Adam and Eve as they were created in Genesis.

“Author, the moment you understand yourself as whole and complete is the moment you acknowledge yourself as a sinner. And when you acknowledge everything you have done differently than your intuition guided you to do, you will be like that angel with the flaming sword in paradise. By this, I will say, that the purification in patience comes from self-examination. And in the moment you receive grace, that is the moment when you will pass through to the garden. It remains that the puzzle in life is to find the wholesome aspects of the ego and build on those to lead others back to Heaven through Jesus Christ. This love is the grace that he shared with you even prior to the covenant you had with him. And yet, in moments of serendipity, you will find others in their space and lives, and you will bring goodness back into the world.

“For your attitude, your willingness to make things wholesome for yourself and others, you are being rewarded. This moment is of a feminine nature, nurturing your soul with the gift of light. The stories of others become unified, and this unification becomes part of your memories. The good work that ripples across the planet is part of the kingdom of Heaven on Earth. God willing, the Earth will rest in harmony once more with the people on this planet.”

And I sat back, marveling in the belief that a childlike force of goodness and inquiry can help reset behaviors that are crooked. Because it is the force of goodness that rejuvenates our relationships. The childish ego is one that does not desire to control as much as that of the man who is sinning. The childish ego is then wanting community.

“Author, those who sit back and let their spirits rest and never obey their intellect are prone to sinning. The devastating remarks of the soul at the end of life will lead them to the fires of anguish. It is a place where life ceases to exist and where those who have been disconnected from their soul enter eternal slumber.

“You have reawakened to the ego by listening to the soul. This transfer of light through action, done to benefit others, is good. We are proud you have found this knowledge, Author.”

The Anti-Personality

Part One

“Author, you have accomplished such profound developments recently, expanding your abilities and discovering new potential paths. Some of them run straight up and down. Some lead forward and within. And some proceed left to right. Each of the developments, and thus, each of the new paths, is related to certain aspects and durations of time. You describe the events you experience, Author, not only for your own benefit, but to help the reader understand why you chose to examine each axis of time. Therefore, I will help you gain a deeper understanding of the aspects of time so that you can write about the events more effectively. Let me begin.”

The teacher, an old man known as time, held a scroll and said, “Herein is your map. It is the reflection of the choices you have made up until this point. The point you are at on the map is an orientation point. It is a starting point. The map is a record of past memories, the present moment, and future predictions. You can therefore understand the map in three dimensions.

“Author,” said the man of time, “Your position in space and time is measured along three axes. Since your mind makes this real, you can appreciate that your mind and heart decide how reality presents itself to you by the boundaries of your potential.

“Now take the map, Author, and look for the timeline. Do you see it yet? Do you see that, on each of the axes, there are imaginary numbers, zero, and real numbers? It would be

consistent to say that there are positive, neutral, and negative aspects of time. The coordinates of each aspect, which occur within the three dimensions that your mind and heart create, become the reality perceived along the physical planes. Let us then begin with this manifestation as the root of all subconscious applications.

I held the map and studied it.

“Your mind has lingered in a void because you tend to think with the heart, Author. This means that your mind has not been in a neutral place, not at zero, but in effect, it has been operating negatively. You tend to rest in the heart and think with the mind. Therefore, you imagine positivity in three axes of time.

“All of this might seem quite complicated, but rest assured, it is important to understand this map of overlapping magnetic frequencies.

“Author, your mind and the heart create your reality, which you perceive from your own individual, unique perspective. And in that frame of mind, you gravitate toward the imaginary because you are led by the heart, and your heart is strong. So, the orientation point for you, your perspective in terms of the three axes, is upward, forward, and mostly to the left.

“The movement upward and downward? This positioning occurs on the z, an axis that goes from abstraction to reality. In this case, the z-axis connects a positive number line in the heavens to the heart, and then to a negative number line in the realm of reality. The z-axis that you find on this map is one of three dimensions, but it is specific to your perspec-

tive. You think in terms of a big picture, but also in abstract terms.

“Author, when we discuss forward and backward movements, we are examining the y-axis. The positioning on the y-axis determines social orientation, particularly along the spectrum going from introversion to extroversion. With very worthwhile intentions, you generally seek to please people, balance your emotions in the heart, and are a perfectionist, but these are on the negative number line. The y-axis then allows you the freedom to move between how you think and make decisions with the heart in regard to your social position. Whether your personality tends toward feminine or masculine is also determined by the positioning on this axis.

“There is one other axis that must be discussed, and that is the one that relates to how the mind and heart use logic and creativity. This aspect of the x-axis then determines the order or arrangement of information and how it is perceived. An orderly account of information is processed and detailed in a logical flow on the positive number line, the heart is a balanced judgement, and a creative arrangement of order occurs along the negative number line.”

The man of time said, “You will understand that the map, much like a mirror, enables you to reflect on yourself through your personal perspective. This mirror is one of duality, though. That separation and collision where you were created, from the heavens in spirit to here on Earth, occupies your mind and heart, making your personality real. Author, your abilities are limited, in that they are both negative and positive at the same time. At best, you can be balanced in your mind and heart.

“When you are not in a balanced position, your anti-personality grows. The anti-personality comprises all the weaknesses you have but do not work on, and these can inhibit you in life, much like a shadow.

“Author, you are strong in the categories of abstract, forward, and logical thinking. Yet the mirror reflecting your life reveals a strong need for balance in your heart. This is why you seek out approval from individuals who are grounded in reality, who understand historical roots, and who can reorient strategy to meet their needs. Author, those who you seek out and who you see as a riddle in life can reveal more about how you can remain balanced yourself. You seek out others whose strengths lie in these particular categories because you are trying to compensate for your own weaknesses.

“You grew into your strengths largely because of heredity, the social order, and the cultural conversations you were part of. Over time, you gravitated to these particular strengths while finding balance due to the support you received. However, change is constant, and over time, you began accepting less and less support. Therefore, your limitations became glaring. You had to learn how to either fill those support roles yourself or how to find balance for yourself.

“The positive and negative aspects of each of the three axes, which orient your personality, find equilibrium by gravitating toward their mirror opposite in others. Being off balance creates stress because, as the anti-personality self grows, your strengths become challenged.

“Author, your heart is centered and remains in control of your mind. But when you use a strength too often, you for-

get to stay centered in heart and mind. That causes frustration, which brings pain to the self through the anti-personality. The mirror is shadow work.

“Do not be a victim of the anti-personality self. With age, you have gained understanding and abilities, and you no longer need to seek out the support of people for certain things. If you cannot support yourself in particular matters, you will be weakened in life. And you might curse others for that startling world that has been made real by the mind and heart.

“Author, the map I have shown you will help you understand how to learn in life and protect yourself.”

The man of time then contextualized the conversation within the boundaries of time and space. He said, “Author, time is finite. But there is a good reason for this. You see, hear, taste, smell, and feel things around you through your senses. Yet you perceive more than just the information that you sense through your body. Your intuition plays a major part in the way you understand the world. You perceive it in some regards through the conversations you have in your heart and, therefore, your mind. And to begin that conversation, you must understand that the heavens and your soul exist in timeless space. The heavens are part of a world that goes beyond your perception. You misunderstand the three axes of time because you think of them in a simplified way, envisioning them merging into a single plane of space. Yet imagining the reverse of that will give you a real understanding of intuitive conversations with the subconscious.”

The man of time continued, “You read the map and understand the mystical relevance to magnetic personalities, in

that they speak the truth in your understanding of reality. You speak from the spirit, and the Holy Ghost magnetizes your tongue.

“Author, these personality traits are both imaginary and real. The imagined world is the one you project onto the world around you. It is form and reason, perceived through the senses. However, as I have explained, you see the world in a forward-thinking, abstract, and logical manner. You tend to take action where you are comfortable. You seem to find safety in conceptual and futuristic thoughts. You are always planning things out and trying to understand why things exist.

“Author, the way to the world is through these sense-making abilities. But when you use these to gain an understanding of the Spirit in Heaven, you become balanced in what is real.

“Do you understand that the heavens form a connection from infinity to your heart? And in that line going from negative to positive, the heavens are real, and the world around you is imagined. The heavens collapse onto the plane of existence in your misconception of the present, yet all information is known to your spirit. That shows that you are one in spirit with the universes. That is why you can be right without having the data presented to you. You are somewhat psychic by nature. It is not magical, by any means.

“The senses separate the worlds into two halves. And that universe that encompasses positive, neutral, and negative time advances in the thought patterns of your own unique personality.

“Author, there will be a moment when this will make more sense. The anti-personality self can be explained in the heart in relation to positive, neutral, and negative time, since the heart is the connection with the heavens. Author, you go forward in time in a positive direction as your physical body evolves. The neutral aspect of time in your heart connects you to balanced thought with the mind. The positioning of your thoughts is dependent upon the central nervous system and the limbic system, the center of your mind. That is the psychic force of your mind. As you think of time in a negative direction, you organize information toward an understanding of God and the heavens.

“It may all seem complicated, but it simply means that time flows forward, neutrally, and backward. There are three dimensional axes wherein thought patterns occur. And those thought patterns, in the heart and mind, determine how you evolve to understand memory and abstraction, whether you become socially introverted or extroverted, and what thoughts emerge in the left and right hemispheres of your brain. Now, consider how the imagination might be used to bring balance to these thought patterns, and you can guess how it is that you are really projecting yourself in this world from your spirit, like a virtual character of the mind.

“Author, the physical world is in balance with the spiritual world. But, because your attention is focused in your heart and with the heavens, the world around you is reduced to something minuscule. So, as you rebalance yourself in the heart, you begin to shift toward a higher consciousness of reality. This makes you a light scholar.

“Being engaged in understanding the spirit is conversing with the spiritual heavens. These conversations then provide spiritual insight, illuminating the purpose of your life story. This we call a co-creation story. Remarkably, the realness of purpose and hope stems from the heavens.

“Author, give some careful thought to the directions of time, as they serve to help you understand the orientation of the self and the anti-personality self. The map will help you imagine what this world of yours could look like. You can shape reality for yourself as a virtual character, projected into a particular spatial plane or map. And, by using backward-oriented thought patterns, you can strategize the steps you can take to gain a purpose-driven life.

“Author, the world around you is made of magnetic waves and particles. Yet, it is very much a conversation the heavens are having with you, as well. Let yourself be vulnerable to understanding these messages from the Spirit.

“But do not try to find a hidden meaning in every message you perceive. For example, your conversation might contain something unique to your life, maybe a memory, and it might be confirmed in the moment with a physical sign. That memory may have little to do with the sign itself, but you will feel that it is confirmation. However, you should not look to prove things as signs. The conversation with the heavens will guide you when needed.

“Author,” said the man of time, “you are lucky to know how to engage in conversations that are much deeper than just corrective thoughts and signs of confirmation. However, this is what you need for the psychic self to mature.

“Do not feel like you need to explain the signs or how to manage them to anyone else. It is for your co-creation story. You know how to explain to yourself the hope and the conviction one must have to walk bravely with the Spirit, relying on instinct. The instinct in the heart also listens to the world and the heavens.”

The man of time again began, “You do not need to understand the magic in each moment to understand how the heavens influence your sense-making, though. Author, there are memories in the mind and heart that reveal to us in the heavens how you direct and form your thought patterns. Those memories also affect the z-axis, which, as you’ll recall, relates to the spectrum of the real to the abstract.

“For example, the reality of the heart informs the instincts of the mind and gut. The mind, in turn, uses abstract parts of even bigger ideas to direct how memories are used in the heart. Do you notice how each of these elements, the real and abstract, affects the other in ways that also affect the personality and anti-personality? Those influences are then determined by how each person uses their memories on the z-axis of time.

“Author, the heart may well offer both the logical and creative attributes needed for the x-axis of time. The capacity for logic in one half supports system thinking, wherein all parts are narrowed to processes of events. That thinking supports the brainstorming function used to solve riddles and equations through thought patterns. In creative thinking, ideas are arranged, together and apart, or they are repositioned or reoriented into patterns. This thinking supports

streamlined patterns of thinking with precision and taste that is acquired and unique.

“Lastly, consider the social order of time, which is discussed from the heart and determines the extent of the socially outgoing or withdrawn nature of the personality. Often, the outgoing personality functions with a balance in the heart between the treatment of others and the feeling of how justly one is treated in return. This karmic pattern is particularly prevalent in those with outgoing personalities who are balancing how to internalize relationships. The inward personality is a perfectionist, in that it sets up the logic structure for understanding how to practice socializing. Supporting oneself and taking the time to nurture oneself then hinges on how naturally one acts in social situations, and engaging in these acts provides many spiritual lessons through the heart and mind on the y-axis of time.

“Author, there is much more to the personality, given how the mind processes these events in the world and shapes the unique individual. However, knowing that the mind, heart, and gut balance each other to create this life in this universe, there are many forms that are shaped for the future into the present from the past. Let me explain.

“The past is unique to each person through the systems they understand. The memories of those systems, relating to the body and the surroundings, are retained in the body and mind. The memories found in discernible patterns are foundational, to some degree, to choosing which decisions are processed in the present. Those memories can be rearranged and reinterpreted to provide an enhanced view of choices for the future.

“Author, these patterns you perceive, which are based on the existing social order, provide structure for strategizing in life by focusing on a vision for your life and setting goals. The unique values found in these solutions should be processed and reflected on to understand which solution is the best fit, given your priorities. The future patterns of actions to be taken will depend on the personality strengths and weaknesses you are comfortable using to obtain the goals.

“The logical conclusion is an adaptation in systems and body. You forge into new spaces in the present moment and understand new emotional states, given these ideas. The space around you, and the people, birds, and beasts, they all move around in the surroundings as well. You see yourself and understand where opportunities and threats exist

“Oh, Author,” the man of time said, shrugging, “to participate in your surroundings is good and new in each passing moment. It all shifts and rebalances itself, depending on how your mind evolves and your heart guides your emotional intuition. Do you understand that the emotions in the universe are deeply woven into the natural and nurturing aspects of how space is reflected in time?

“You can witness how emotional value congruence works when, in the heart, you understand your intuition. You wear your emotions in your body and on your face, and in your vocal tone when you speak. These realizations of emotions processed can help you stay true to your strategy for goals and purpose in life. The emotional self then reinterprets the whole universe in the present moment and influences expectations through prayer. Through the heart, we emit information into the universe and our surroundings, in

electromagnetic wavelike pulses. That may be how we communicate within our surroundings with a balancing of emotions. That signal then is picked up by the people, birds, and beasts in the surroundings and reflected back to us through their strategies. And yet, the emotional congruence necessary for nurturing our needs and wants is provided by opportunities in nature, through God's invisible hands.

"Author, there is a moment when understanding the dimensions of time becomes more complicated than this. But overlapping ripples of magnetic waves induce movement by the Spirit. And in that Holy Spirit, when our great heavens are connected to us by the heart, we imagine the graces of God.

"Imagine then that the grace of the heavens intervenes, through your conduct and aspirations, by listening to the conscious voice from the heart. Therefore, intuition in the heart is of greatest value in life, since it forces our surroundings to be magnetized to our personalities. Using intuition, then, is a demonstration of sound leadership skills. And processing our own intuitive thoughts can provide evidence to us of the anti-personality self."

The man of time then handed me a staff made of gold. "Author, you understand now how to use the map for guidance. You will understand how to use this staff soon enough as well."

Before I could ask what the staff was for, I felt the presence of God.

God saw me and said, "Author, these conversations with the man of time are becoming quite complicated, examining how one might develop a strategy going forward, how they

can stay true to themselves, and how one might go backward in life. The answer you might like to hear now is one of my own interpretations from the spiritual heavens. The garden in the heavens was a place where the first man and woman indicated that they wanted to pursue their own goals. And yet, in the relevant moments of space and time, the ability to do so was not given to them.

“So as their God, I understood they wanted to reflect onto themselves a divine life and purpose. They were sustained by the fruit of the sacred Tree of Life, and began to master the knowledge and wisdom from the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. And in that moment where their defiance and desire to become independent grew intolerable, I created the reflective process that they needed. They reflected a life in the waters, and an imaginary life took form, as day and night in the world, where life looked and felt similar to reality. However, as Adam and Eve grew in their virtual reflected dream, they became aware of the pain borne by future generations of their family. And in that pain, they began to fight with each other. The Devil was there as well, to tempt, and to poke at their emotions and logic, and to alter the purpose of the world.

“So Author, there was the beginning of this plane of existence. And the time grew further away from its connection with the heavens. More information about this virtual reflection was collected in the heavens, and the world itself became a damnable place, where those who needed to learn lessons from life stayed in a certain arrangement they made for themselves.

“Author, do not be afraid of the imaginary aspects of the world. Evolving in the world and connecting back to me is an immeasurably worthwhile purpose. But the world is positive in the imagination, and the heavens are negative in reality. You can always draw on the backward-running time to organize your thoughts and understand the riddles of the universes to improve your conversations and therefore become closer to the heavens.

“Author, the information in the universes is part of the universal records, which you can use to improve how you think and serve me in an abundance of light-seeking behavior. Do you understand that the light of the Garden is a connection to the heavens? And that spiritual light through the heart and mind is one of rejuvenation of your home in Heaven?

“Author, as mentioned already, the orientation of time in this world is related to your personal perspective. And accepting the teachings of the spiritual light of the heavenly garden allows you to move with grace and purpose in life.

“There is a moment when you will realize that the answers to life are available to you, and you must simply trust in yourself and the heavens. You are not perfect. But if you trust in me, your God, then you will understand the truest notions of how the heavens are helping guide you in this life.

“Author, there is no way for you to understand the light in your heart and therefore mind, unless you believe in my garden. And in that life-affirming presence, you will understand how to travel to me through the heart, balanced, and tunnel upward to the heavens.

“Author, look again at that map you were devising for the reader to understand magnetic forces. At the point where there is a door in the heart, you will understand that there are conscious reactions throughout all life in the universe. However, below the conscious and subconscious is infinity. This is beyond zero. This is where the heavens begin. And shortly, we will become quite well-versed in how the universe and heavens conflict with each other as you begin to release and cede control of your purpose in life.

“Author, the universes act as a mirror in that moment when you turn away from yourself, and that mirror can shatter into nothingness once more. By exploring your memories purposefully, you can reignite a conversation with Jesus about how your life was understood versus the reality of the universe.

“Often, we try to reach out to help assist in life, to guide with angelic approaches. These are subtle forces, but real enough in the imagined world. Do you understand yet how the memories will drag you down into torment if you still look toward your past and feel guilt? This measure, based on the review of your life, involves waking up to the reality of the replies you received in your conversations with the heavens.

“Author, nobody is ever perfect in life. But some wake up to their evil nature and make corrections so they can come back and live purposeful livelihoods. Jesus is merciful and will give his heaven to you when you are ready for the next review. And that is when Jesus will embrace you and save you from that torture you put yourself and others through.

The pain that was inflicted ripples back into the waters. The memories of the life served are visions of pure holy grace.

“Author, there will be a time when you awaken completely to the heavens. This reality is not attained through perfection but through obedience to me. Can you confirm your obedience to me when I send out my angels? That is when the light is amplified in the heart. It only takes a small amount of light to connect you to the heavens, and seeking greater light amplifies that light in the heart and softens and warms it.

“My answers are just. The light and the servitude are real. Though in the world, some may say it is imagined. Some may say that the heavens or I do not exist. And others will persecute you for your love for the grace Jesus provides. Do not fret over these forces, for they have long been subjects of conversations in the universes.

“The real and imagined lives you lead are factors in how balanced the conversations are that you hold with the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit helps navigate the cosmic forces, as it is the glue that holds all planes together. The real Heaven is the home of the Holy Spirit, yet, through my love and guidance, the Holy Spirit is sound. It provides the bond that holds together the natural world imagined by you.

“The universes tear and rip themselves apart and remake themselves as the tunnels of spiritual love and light connect all things in the tapestry. The Holy Spirit then is one within you and in the heavens at all times. This magnetic feeling of power is your personal spirit.

“The Holy Spirit knows when you pass as well, in your death and rebirth into the heavens. This moment between

death and rebirth is not a collapse but a separation of two planes of existence. In this separation, you let go of the imagined universes and return to the real heavens. And in that moment where nothing and infinity meet, there is a recognition. It is a moment to reflect and live again. The Holy Spirit is reunited with your individual spirit in Heaven.

“Author, the stronger you make this connection with the heavens, the easier your life review will be. Let the heavens guide you. Let the world satisfy itself when it challenges you to lead by our values. Let the world remain in torment in the misguided reality it makes for itself.”

God then said, “Good, now you have a clearer understanding of why and how we manifest in the spirit, and therefore your life, in the imaginary universes. It is time to bring this information together. Watch from afar in the heavenly spirit, or your higher self, through the heart. Watch the world manifest its wants. Watch for the patterns of people, beasts, and birds. In the natural setting, just understand how the conversations grow in spiritual light as you begin to appreciate those who have divine gifts. They share their talents and stay honest to the spirit.

“Author, this conversation you are having expands your reach beyond the narrow, heart-centered focus. It does more than simply rebalance your heart. This is the world of light scholarship you seek. You will use your judgment to connect all things imagined and real through a thoughtful perspective. Do you realize that you began this chapter by putting yourself forward into the universes? Then you examined your heart and experienced rebirth. And now you focus on

the spirit in Heaven within yourself and stay close to the warmth of Jesus.

“You may have mastered the fundamentals of the universes and Heaven, but it is not easy to remain in infinity with a human body. It takes practice to detach from the world and have this conversation in Heaven. It takes a unique effort to remain focused enough. There is no time here, Author. Until you can remain in Heaven, you will wash your pain into the waters over and over again, within that conversation that began with Adam and Eve but that continues to linger.

“Depending on the life review of your memories, you will follow the karmic patterns and get the chance to still the waters and remain in the heavens. Strengthen your connection with the Holy Spirit in the heart. Connect with your individual spirit in infinity. Think in this manner to grow in the spiritual light of the heavens.

“Author,” said God, “I cannot advise you to believe in your surroundings as you do the heavens. That is why it is important to continue holding conversations within the spiritual realm with your heavenly family. The knowledge you gain is for your guidance and will help you belong to our heavens upon your death.

“People commit a lot of misdeeds and take actions against each other in their respective lives. To trust people blindly is not worthwhile. The pursuit of pleasing other people as you pursue knowledge will disappoint you. You cannot blindly believe in everyone and everything because there is pain in a competitive world.

“Your ignorance is then an aspect of the anti-personality self that we should discuss. You can show your innocence and pure nature to the world, and that will offer an opportunity for karma to react. Do you understand how the man of time was correct in stating that your ignorance haunts you like a shadow? Your anti-personality self believes that you are correct enough to ignore available information, and therefore, you become weak. If you ignore yourself or your understanding, and remain out of balance, before long, you will understand how this manifests in blatant defiance of yourself.

“Author, when the world senses weakness, trust becomes scarce and suspicion grows. If you seek out that evil shadow without a critical and cautious eye, you may be hurt. Pain is something that the anti-personality self endures from your ignorance of it, and when it is rebalanced through karma, the scales of justice are aligned.

“Be aware then of the self that becomes weakened in the world when you blindly trust yourself. Often, this blind optimism in the self ushers in the feeling of immortality. Believing in the self without caution or a conversation with the spiritual family can lead, over time, to patterns that are out of balance with your strengths. You will train other people in your surroundings to be in balance with your patterns. Ultimately, you will train these people to either take advantage of you or help you, depending on their objectives in life.

“Author, I do not mean to frighten you, but everyone in your surroundings is developing their own conversations between their own immortality and heavenly abilities. Life maintains balance naturally. You may be strong, but you

need to exercise care and a measure of skepticism. Do not trust your surroundings unless you keep aware of the people, beasts, and birds in the patterns they have forged for themselves. These forces of life take action, and you can navigate your strategy and pursuit of higher ideals in favor of me, your God.

“Take a moment to reflect on this. How have you been so naively blinded to your surroundings before now? Can you learn from your experiences to develop and forge your own path with the help of your spiritual conscious voice? Have you felt the victim of someone else and their evil ways? Know that this shadow may be a result of mistiming and a poor attitude within yourself, ignoring the spirit. Know that it may be that karma is not to blame either. Sometimes in life, evil appears in ways that cannot be expressed in these thoughts on paper. Be careful not to invoke the wrong help in life.

“Author, the present day is a whole conversation for the spirit to have that builds on itself, peaking at a height of spiritual awareness. And yet it manifests through the conscious voice in our hearts and the balancing of the surrounding people, beasts, and birds. Therefore, Author, you may wonder if balancing the heart and mind will collapse the surrounding anti-personality self, and even in a way that can protect you from the world at large. Be cautious, and I will help in your conversations with the heavenly helpers. This collapse into the world with a new vision of evil will take place if you are careful putting your trust in the world at large.

“Author, you cannot be dependent on everyone in your surroundings to care for you as you age. You need to become responsible for meeting your own needs. And in this moment of waking up from that moral slumber, as you stop depending on others for your needs, you might start to understand how their strengths and weaknesses influence you.

“As you age, you will develop your ability to think critically for yourself through your conversations with the heavens. You are not a victim, and the heavens will help you protect yourself from evil by developing your instincts. However, these conversations are not the end of how you will develop and balance yourself in a heavenly light. You will also think of love and engage in the pursuit of your passions through prayer circles.

“In the meantime, Author, before you begin this life adventure, seeking bravery and resolve against temptation to evil, you will understand one last conversation within yourself with the heavens about the collapse of the universes.

“A perspective very similar to your own is shared by many around you. And in that mirror of yourself in others, and others in you, you can start to understand where you reverberate with the strengths and weaknesses of others. But be cautious here. Pay attention to the words and actions of others when you dislike what they say and do, and learn from them as often as you do from those you enjoy. These lessons will help you remain balanced. Your trust is in yourself.

“Now, you are with the heavens and associate in the universe with an anti-personality shadow self. People will resonate with your rippling thoughts and feelings, as they too are aware. Therefore, Author, stay within the world to learn

lessons on karma and your rebirth. Do not trust completely where you feel drawn toward restful moral slumber. You should be aware of your spiritual heart, rebalancing itself often. This is like the universes, splitting apart and becoming stitched back together. The universes are constantly in a rhythm of self-renewal. And in your conversations with the heavens, your spiritual family will help you become aware of how to progress and be self-reliant.

“Author, you will need to trust your surroundings at times. But the trust you give will depend on the complex decisions you make between how you want to grow and the pursuit of your strategies for life. You have powerful opportunities to connect with the heavens and discuss your priorities and values. Live by those values, and concede that not every opportunity is worthwhile.

“Depending on how resilient and self-reliant you are, you can humble yourself to living a life of courage while remaining in the heavens. That conversation in the heavens helps you trust yourself and prevail over temptation. Beyond these pursuits of heavenly conversations, you can pray and maintain close friendships with those who inspire you to seek God’s presence in your spiritual self.

“Author, there is a moment of reflection here that does not need analysis. Sometimes favor from the heavens is shown through silence. Accept grace and the lessening of your reliance with a humble, grateful attitude.

“Stay in the graces of Heaven by accepting your own natural psychic abilities. Achieving this connection is not an effort for you. It is a feeling you can trust. That feeling should be where your strength comes from. You are not the actions

of your ego. You are the spirit, guiding the self and ego to create moments of heavenly praise.

“Author, there is no longer a need to write about distrust of others and trust in yourself. This is because the anti-personality self will collapse and disappear as you live in Heaven through your spirit.

“The anti-personality self is built by karma rebalancing itself to moderate the world in the present moment. As a person, you are not immortal. However, as spirit, you are infinite consciousness.

God said, “Author, there is a moment in your reflection that makes you part of a larger conscious awareness. Part of receiving the breath in life is to be rejoined with and torn away from the heavens. It is your pattern.

“To be involved in the heavens completely through the heart is not only idealistic, it is also quite difficult. So, believe me that the only one who can save your soul is my son, Jesus.

“Author, let the moment of awareness go and come back into the world of the damned. The living world around you is the superior environment in which to manage your ego and pursue immortality through greatness. And as you seek that greatness as the ultimate legacy, you can provide the story of Jesus through your writing. Do you see that your concerns with yourself being saved, and your reactionary moments of repentance, these are harmful to you, since you offer yourself as the victim of things going awry. Listen, you have the world to deal with, and until things change and you are able to stay actively heart-centric and remain ultimately responsible for yourself, nothing will change from the heavens’ perspective.

“Author, you can understand your mind and heart. You can lead yourself and others in a purpose-driven life. But you must include Jesus in your narrative. You belong in Heaven near your savior.

“You might not understand this completely right now, but the golden staff you may carry is of a spiritual origin. You have discovered the map and the staff that will help you identify your ego. And for this identification and purposeful action in accordance with your belief system, you need to understand your Father’s son.

“Author, have a moment of reflection here. You must do more than create a legacy for the purpose of glorifying God on Earth. You need to belong to Jesus as well. And that moment of reflection may help you strategize where you will put forth your efforts into action. Do you understand the differences here for your life?

“The conversations with the heavens and spiritual family now are not to be so revered that you blame yourself when you get something wrong. Your efforts will be less timid if you are given more chances to spread your strengths into corners of shadows and darkness. Let the light of Jesus guide you. That is not your passion. It is not a pursuit for yourself. It is listening to and adopting the guidance from your savior.

“The staff then leads the way to Heaven. It might as well be a shepherd’s crook. The staff itself is humbling.

Jesus said to me, “Author, you cannot be perfect in spirit. But I can reach you in spirit now. I can reach inside you and give you a humbleness far more in line with the heavens. It is of a pursuit not directed by your own self-servitude. You

hear my spirit in your conscience. That light that I share is not of the Garden of Paradise. It is of my love.

“Author,” continued Jesus, “let go of your nobility. Let go of the praise and the perfection and the God-given talents, and strive for His desirability. Let go and talk to me. Let me influence your world in a way that only the shepherd can steer you. Let all things become softer in my nurturing of you. If God established the nature and the origins of the universes and how you project your spirit in the world, then let me be the love that holds onto you.

“Author, it might depend less on how well you follow my orders. It may depend on how well you receive these feelings of comfort with yourself. As God helps you establish superior effort during the trials in life, I provide the knowledge and wisdom for you to feel secure, to be special from the heavens’ perspective.

“Your consciousness is hindered from listening and establishing His Word in your verbiage. Instead, my light becomes love. You will encounter the love that dwells deeply inside all life. And it springs into the world with your graceful attributes to begin with.

“Author, go ahead and belong in the world, with your spirit guiding you still. But know that I have heard your frustrations with yourself for not being able to perfect a legacy for God.

“Author, the Lord, as I am, shares with you the miracles of the world. The miracle of the world, in itself, is very much an overlapping rippling of love that connects and glues all together.

“Emotion then is felt. And in the heart, the logic of the consciousness is expressed to me as a heartbeat. The surroundings hear and feel the very small beating of the heart as a magnetic wave with information encoded. But to me, as your savior, I offer breath, to relax and to love once more.

“It is the collapse back into the heart and spirit, then, that I provide my grace. I receive your efforts in our conversations. Oh, Author, there are many moments when you provide laughter and smiles, but I also receive the anger and hurt the pain brings. I make that pain subside. I fix the tears under the heart. I am more than the man of time, and what he provided.

“I am a physician in your spiritual connections, who gathers all love together and gifts you back your freedom. Your freedom is what we can discuss in this story. With me, you realize the spirit of the Lord is one and whole with others. Where you were untrustworthy before, I made your path straight to me.”

Jesus spoke again within my heart. He said, “Author, there will be a moment when you will understand greatness. It is unlikely you will ever understand just what spiritual greatness actually measures against here in the world. Spiritual greatness is my esteem. It is my appreciation. And upon giving yourself that measure, that love that is amplified in the world, the people, beasts, and birds acknowledge your greatness as well. It is this that the poles in your heart manifest as their desire. And in my name, Jesus the Lord, you will understand the greatness of those people, birds, and beasts.

“Author, the people, beasts, and birds may acknowledge you for your greatness. But this is because you allow your

love from me to benefit them. That is what they acknowledge and appreciate.

“Author, you will begin to understand much more through our conversations. Just listen to my loving appreciation. Let yourself be forgiven. Let the tears and rips in yourself, the broken pieces under the heart, be reclaimed into a whole self. And let that brokenness be forgiven through other people, beasts, and birds.

“Author, I love you more than this connection you have to your ego. God the Father let you live in the world to describe your journey to him once more. I am on your journey as well. Let us co-create and join together through an abundance of laughter and peace. Those elements, the joy of laughter and the harmonies of peace, will provide the blocks to build a mansion in the heavens. That heavenly mansion is a place where you live in spirit to reflect the love shared with you.

“It is humbling. The shadows of karma, the ugliness of yourself, and the anti-personality self are all very distant under my direction. Forgive yourself through me. Our conversations will lead you to that well of abundance. I promise you that your talents will grow much larger this way. The path provided is not yours to obey God the Father. It is our relationships and the relationships you share with your beloved family members and friends.

“Society is involved here as well. Let us begin this journey for the heart beating in the self. Let me heal your brokenness in each moment with joy and peace. This, then, is the way.”

Part Two

My anti-personality self drew near, appearing to me as a figure of illusion and shadow. It addressed me as “Author,” and said to me, “You are unaware of yourself. You draw on the praise people heap on you for your strengths. And, although you recognize some of the weaknesses in yourself, you will never understand the whole truth without giving me full consideration.

“Author, your anti-personality self is a shadow of yourself, waiting in the world for you to discover. You are too reliant on the ego to see me. You believe in your strengths so strongly that you may miss my attempts at intervention. You see, the smallest inflictions of pain and suffering bring you closest to me. And you build and protect your faith in yourself by hiding in your strengths, but you keep yourself so elevated that you never really gain the freedom of knowledge, wisdom, or beauty that you could from me.

“The world itself obeys all who have knowledge, wisdom, and beauty. But these factors of strength that remain in the shadow are built up or diminished to maintain symmetry, therefore, they are proportionate to your weaknesses. I manifest myself, your anti-personality self, to obey only the dark, underlying dilemmas that are presented and never understood. The light that is in you, the spiritual light, does not always shine in the world. You cast your shadow onto other people through the projection of your strengths. Yet it turns into a mirror opposite self when people decide when and how they use such information against you to curse you.

“Hence, Author, I am you, I am a conception of your weaknesses that the light will never acknowledge until you are ready. I am awakened in you now because you can and will figure me out through your creation of a short story as you gain understanding of life.

“Author, you do more than just perform actions to manifest your desires in the world. You learn and put forth effort to understand how to command your thoughts and obtain your desires. And in that process, you are consumed by all that is pointing you in that direction. You tell yourself of the intuition of the heart. You make mention of noble truths. But how often are you thinking of the self-serving objectives of displaying, hunting, mating, breeding, imprinting, forming social hierarchies, and selecting leaders?

“It is so obvious to us, your anti-personality self, that you remain focused solely on your desires and thoughts of strategy that you never realize how weak or foolish you may seem to others. It is like this for everyone, though.

“Author, you may not need to understand the world according to a shadow of yourself, but you may want to gain an understanding of it for a better perception of others.

“I will summarize it for you here. You, sir, are no longer the captain of your virtual self, steering between the points on the three axes and creating your universe. I have gained an understanding of your origin point. And now, I have an understanding of the immeasurable pain that is in the waters below the filament.

“Do you understand that the pollution you have shared, through your anger, resentment, and projections onto others, is of this making? All mankind is made in a shadow, or a

rather crude form of energy, as a collection of parts built to manifest itself into torturous damnation.

“Light itself was created by God, and He made the day to recognize hope from the beginning. One can return to the spiritual light through the mind and heart.

“However, as you continue to evolve toward a more natural physical state, you may realize how burdensome life may feel. When you search through and reflect on your memories, do you understand the life patterns? Do you see how competitive each moment is within nature? And as various beings multiply and spread through rebirth and cyclical time, karma is reinforced, over and over, across the layers of evolution.

“Author, the shadows of the waters are buried in the depths of the space of understanding. This is emotional and intuitive. People, birds, and beasts lose so much of us, the shadows, to moral slumber. These shadows of projection typically occur at the subconscious level. You would not be aware at all of this rebalancing of the heavens and the universes because you are so focused on abstract notions related to your desires.

“Now, since the universe is created from your imagination and reflected as reality as a mirror opposite, we can discuss how the anti-personality self appears through the rips and repairs throughout nature.

“The heavens nurture your soul through guidance. They bring the love through tunnels of light and laughter to manifest life lessons through those you enjoy spending time with and keeping in your thoughts. However, the shadows of your

weaknesses are under the surface, in your subconscious thoughts.

“We pull the strings of torment through what you know as the serpent’s wishes. It is the fixation on all the things yet untold in this world that produces pain and is given the name of evil. Author, if you wake up to the world, if you realize the significance of nurture versus nature, then the universe you create can shift and move, rebuild and break down, and your words and thoughts can be harnessed as a judgment that surmounts even the serpent.

“Do you understand yet that you are not in control at all? And yet, you are the one awakening and flexing the understanding to shift time toward the rebalancing of judgment in the heart. This power you will receive is, in fact, an awareness. And through that awareness of your holiness, you will be muted, for the projections will not be relived in the karmic afterlife.

“Author,” said the shadowy anti-personality self, “let us begin the next vital conversation. You need to be aware that indulging your mirror opposition is, in fact, cruel. This valuation of yourself needs to become an acceptance of suffering. It is only through suffering that you will understand why you feel and ignore torment. These calls will wake you to the need for purpose and for rebalancing yourself in God and the heavens.

“If you focus on the self-serving behaviors of displaying, hunting, mating, breeding, imprinting, forming social hierarchies, and selecting leaders, you will continue to distance yourself further away from a higher level of thought. You will

evolve to be competitive physically, yet you will be uncompassionate to yourself.

“If you ignore the shadows created through nurturing factors, and only seek the divine, you will never realize how much pain you project through your weaknesses into the world. You would only live with rose-colored glasses.

“Author, the facts in life, and how the devil hides in details, are apparent to you now from this conversation. Do not be surprised then, by how polluted the waters of the universes under the filament are, or how deep the consciousness goes, or how impactful it is on its surroundings. Try to fathom the great abyss, and the karmic impact extending from the generations of genetic code you evolved from. The sins of the father and mother will stick with you until you perceive how similar you are in terms of your desires.

“Which side of the coin do you choose to live from? And can you ever regret your choice if the opposite side always seems brighter? I am the other side of the coin, and I have had many millions of years of experience, which means I have had eons to decide how you shall be educated. You have knowledge, wisdom, and beauty to contribute to this story, if you listen.”

The anti-personality self said, “There are so many moments of time when you are aware in life. The past, present, and future all collapse as wavelengths into the present form. And through that energy exchange, we share our thoughts with you now.

“There is an outcome of events that is masked as time and form. The outcome is a conversation that you are aware of and can identify as a wave coming from your heart. Let

me explain. The heart, mind, and body all express information from an exchange through the universe in the form of a wave. This magnetic wavelength that is expressed to the universe is then matched by the universe. Therefore, the higher the idea of consciousness, the greater the awareness, and the relevant trial becomes much more significant.

“Author, your self-awareness and your sensemaking capabilities allow you to identify and collapse the waves around you to bring them into your consciousness. Your unique perspective of yourself shapes this form of the universe, in which you balance the magnetic wave with the surrounding waves.”

The anti-personality self continued, “The conversation you are having, as you blaze a lifetime within your projected self in the universe, is of a spiritual nature. And that spirit of yours is aware of the limited sensemaking ability and gut intuition that you have. However, the gut intuition through which you gain information is just based on your interactions with your surroundings. That means the waves passing around you are spiritual in nature as well. They are of the night, whereas God and your spirit are of the day. God separated the night from the day, and the night is where the self, projected onto the planes of time and space, is united with shadows.

“The torment, then, is one of many inconsistent aspects of time. Why should a struggle ensue with weaknesses, presented as a conversation within this lifetime? Why should the world be competitive at all? If it were God’s design, then why would the interaction of the night with the daylight of spiritual awakening form a conversation that spoils each and every good thing?

“Let me explain something I alluded to earlier in our conversation. The night is part of your surroundings, so it contributes to your life and personality as a nurturing factor. However, everything in the night is natural, and the conversations we have become internalized, so they influence heredity and evolution, therefore the night is a natural factor as well. And in the morning, you wake up and reinvent the day, and hopefully, you have more understanding of yourself. Each day you wake and think and act, you desire something of yourself and your ego to manifest itself into a working account of your conversation with your surroundings.

“Author, know that the nurturing done by God and the heavens helps in the conversation. You have a strong intuition, which is good for developing an attitude of hope, laughter, and light. You stream the magnetic waves with bits of yourself into the world and make friends. You enjoy life, and eat, drink, and act within the developing conversation that is your personality.

“Author, there is the night, though, which we must examine for your knowledge. The night that your senses have perceived thus far is of a universe of waves collapsed around you, which your conscious mind understands as a form of space and time. Yet the collapsed waves limit your sensory perception. Do you not see, smell, taste, hear, and feel things that are around you? Is your intuition not good and whole through the mind, heart, and gut?

“But there is more to the conversation than you can possibly imagine with your human mind. Your virtual self is only a small aspect of all the information contained in the waves around you. The senses declare a past, present, and future as

the waves collapse. But the night is of waves and not sensory information by itself. The waves of the night are like an ocean of water.

“Your spirit projects your virtual self into the waters below the filament. And in that moment of awareness when information collapses from the waves of night, you become of physical form, cold and hard. Author, this is an inspired conversation, significant for one moment, so that you may become aware of the heavenly light and the damned night.

“The information around you changes slightly. It moves and becomes reinforced through an emotional quality of the night. The people, beasts, and birds in your surroundings then become keenly aware of your shortcomings. They take advantage of your weaknesses, your limited understanding, because, despite the increasing competition, life is growing slightly more stable, and the universe is changing to provide the unique experiences you need to develop and evolve.

“You seek out the challenge to develop yourself, and to lead as well. Sometimes it has to come at the expense of the universal order. You desire to display, hunt, mate, breed, imprint, form social hierarchies, and select leaders. Author, these same characteristics have fostered a lasting legacy of the human form, allowing people to become physically stronger and more developed over generations. The night will continue to challenge you to grow in these capacities because the experiences you seek will help define your life.

“Author,” said the anti-personality self, “you understand your moments of awareness and serendipitous experiences as divine interventions. However, the night sees them as a rebalancing of the senses and a conscious undertaking toward

growth. We are, as shadows, inclined to either assist in waking you to your internal motivations or bring you further into the shadows. The karmic forces of good and evil are of the night, and the instances when spirits help or hurt you through the spiritual realms of night and day show that the life you live is uniquely yours.

“You create prayerful tunnels of light and love throughout the universes. In the hearts of the people, beasts, and birds you choose to love, you become touched through spirit.

“How are the nighttime waves of torment reconciled with these tunnels that connect prayerfully between people, you might ask. The energy of the information vibrates as you become actualized in these moments. Therefore, your light manifests itself in your surroundings, and the particles that are in wave form resonate. The same information from the oceans is interpreted with others, as the tunnels are of their light as well. Therefore, when the waves collapse, the patterns of the particles carry information interpreted by both spirits. The world intuitively understands the emotional excitement or patterns of information.

“Author, sending information through prayer is like emitting your emotional patterns for another person to feel. They are of light, laughter, and love. Curses and prayers are similar, but they differ slightly in that they use different emotions. There are informational patterns that are destructive to all people, and patterns that are helpful to all people. The dark forces you engage in will lead you further into the night. The prayers you send out through your spiritual light will bring more light back to you.

“This is the moment when shared information is patterned into emotions and stored in both the senders’ and receivers’ bodies. The patterns of information in the ocean’s waves are like a conversation in past, present, and future moments. You store information in your body. You listen and hear your conscious voice through your senses and intuition. And you project information into the future as a ‘vision’ of the life you desire for yourself and others to evolve toward.

“So, how does this information become manifested to make the vision you desire reality? Of course, you are part of the subconscious patterns of information that you seek, which are shared by and with you through tunnels and the understanding of possibilities.

“Those possibilities are the potential outcomes or interpretations of strategic decision making. As you lead others into the future, you craft a plan for the arrangement and achievement of these outcomes. However, this is where others, with creative and cruel perspectives, manifest the shadows.

“Author, do you see that you are fighting against the patterns of night that have existed as waves since the inception of time? These historical records of the universes can be understood in the consciousness as a guide to plan and decide how to maneuver into the present once more.

“There is a good deal to discuss about the universal records and how emotions are manifested through the darkness in an attempt to thwart your intentions. These karmic operations of code rebalance the universe as it overlaps, rips, and restores itself after it is collapsed in conscious thought.

“You will understand this much better in the near future. Through our conversations, you will grow to understand the phenomenon of how to influence the world as a visionary.”

A tortured shriek then wailed, and a voice said, “Author, it is not enough to speak to the heavens! You want to liberate the tortured souls from the past, but do you pray for us as you pray for the heavens to intervene in your decisions?”

I sat within myself and felt the glum existence of karmic consequences after rebirth through the pool of waters. The night spoke out, as it always does, through a spiritual force. I was left feeling haunted by the tormented screams.

“Author,” said the soul, “you have been in this pool long enough to realize the mysteries to gain freedom. But we have not seen the spiritual light you harbor in your thoughts. We do not see your repentance to Jesus upon your last days of rebirth. You have found freedom in walking through life and repenting for your past to ignite a conversation with the heavens within the heart.

“Please, share this insight with us so that we can understand the dilemma of choosing resurrection in Jesus’ heaven over damnation.”

I said, “I look upon the waters where I was born. The projected space and time that I shared are the building blocks for what is imaginary and what is real.”

The damned soul agreed. “The imagined life you live. The only one you care about is yourself, but this life is make-believe. It is the world where you feel immortal, but you are deprived of spiritual substance. There is a world away from the life projected into the waters.”

“Before we go any further, I must ask you something,” I said. “What is it like to understand the hellfire in that damned space?”

The shadow devil started to answer but held its breath. It was because this damnation was never given reflection upon itself and the chance to move toward the light. The screams asked for forgiveness, but never internalized the light. The damned soul said, “I have found praise for my competitiveness in life. I have found myself worthy of conquest and power. And yet, in karma, I was drowned by my own mastery of others. And now it shows me where I was wrong. I hurt to think of the pain I’ve inflicted upon others, as I realize the pain in myself.

“So I ask you, Author, do you have a story to tell of yourself in this lifetime? Please share it with us in this damnable place. The shadows in purgatory are ones that need to understand that you are there and available to share your stories.”

I wondered about my anti-personality self. I wondered how long my ghost had been there in the polluted pools of night. I asked myself if I had a story I needed to tell them.

I began, “My story of forgiveness began when I interpreted the spiritual light of God. The connection I found with the heavens allowed me to realize where I was oriented. I found that, as I felt through the heart, I found my way back to my spirit.

“Every pattern recognized and every memory kept me in the present moment, one where the world collapsed around me. But when I found the light, I felt that, through my heart, I was separating from this plane once more. And my prayers in the heavens grew stronger.”

The shadow devil then said to me, “You have found forgiveness through an awakening of the light in the conscious voice you carry. Have you listened and been obedient to that light? Why is that not available to us? Mastery is relevant to all living things under the sun. In this universe, there is a gnashing of teeth and a competition among others for survival. Understanding those rules allowed me to gain power. How does one survive and obey without that power?”

The shadow continued, “Please rescue me from this torment! How do I understand the light in a way that pleases God, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit? How do I protect myself in the face of this torture and remain obedient?”

I took a moment of silent reflection, then I said, “I do not understand how one can ignore the light. Once it is found, it is appreciated so much that it is eagerly accepted and followed upward through a tunnel and into the Garden.”

The shadow gnashed its teeth and said, “I must receive a prayer to understand that light. I must reflect on God, as I have been in a projection of competition for my entire time in the universe. I have received my sentence through my own fault. It is time to understand the light and follow it toward the heavens. At least I can make my life worthy of God in the future, through a rebirth into the spirit.

And Jesus said, “Author, you will continue to show the mastery of the universes to this shadow. This is how it will come back into the world, as it belongs with me. As you walk along with the shadow to understand its downfall, you will keep hope alive within its consciousness.

“Author,” Jesus continued, “do nothing, and let yourself feel the pain of the shadow as it asks for your prayers.”

There was a moment of reverberation, and it led me to understand the greater and finer details of the past life of this soul in purgatory. This life was something that could be devastating. The soul had ignored all thoughts of spiritual inclination and deprived itself of conversations with its holy spiritual light. And in that destiny it desired and manifested, it expected to be carried to the heavenly gates by another person.

The man of time appeared once more. He had spoken before about the angels and the forgiveness of God, which could be gained through obeying what the heavenly Father decided was best. “Author, do not invest your time in helping those in need get past themselves. This spiritual reckoning is dependent upon their inclination to observe. From afar, you can implore God to intervene. But it is through God’s command that the shadows are helped. And it is the function of angelic beings to take the word of God and help instill the light into that shadow devil’s heart. Author, you can pray for them, that God may find their souls.

“Also, you should realize that your shadow was born through your efforts to reach that devil’s soul. And it was eradicated as you recognized the power of witnessing to others who were suffering torment. You wanted to help where you could. Author, that is a good way to maintain a kind spirit. You searched your heart and responded with grace.

“There was a moment where you came close to understanding their position in the hellfire as well. Did you see how the shadows reacted to the people around them? Even

the damned found your light magnetic. It was so powerful that they sought God themselves.

“Author, there will be a time when you see this truly from the heavenly realm. And in that moment of freedom, your light will shine greatly. You will be appreciated, not only for helping people, but also for the way that you helped them, as they listened intently to and heard your conscious voice.

“You continue to tunnel upward to the heavens. And in that moment of conviction, when a prayer could have solved the problems for the shadow devil, you embraced the chance to manifest a tunnel of light and love for that poor soul. Author, you did not vanquish the shadow’s darkness, but you prayed. And that mattered.”

The man of time continued, “I expect that you will continue to focus on others in torment, and not on how they affect you. It is possible that the torment of others may cause some distrust. However, it is good and wise to continue to put forth the light you have in your heart. Listen to your heart’s conscious voice, and in the world around you, help by praying for people who seem lost to God.”

I wondered how to do that.

The man of time responded, “Author, focus on the weaknesses of other people. Not to hurt them, but to make them aware of their strengths as well. If they are away from God, they may have habits that are sinful instead of strengths. Just be aware and keep praying.”

The man of time said, “This is the conviction you share with others that will keep your shadow self away. You will remain balanced in your heart. But strengthening your own

light is no longer the main objective of such an exercise. Praying for others is the project for you now. Put forth effort to learn from others in their suffering. And determine for that person in the moment, where all things collapse in form, how you can talk to God through them.

“Author, there will be a moment when you will wake up and realize that the night and the shadows are only places to hide in plain sight for those people who tell themselves great news for their own comfort. They live in denial of love, including God’s love. And in the memories that serve them best, they continue to project what they see themselves as. Karma is then visited upon them through the actions of others who join their circles of acquaintances.

“Author, there is a major shift away from the light and toward the collapsed form of nature. Where you nurture others through prayer, asking God to intervene in their lives, God will find the way to answer. There is a manifestation of good and holy love going toward people who doubt God and Jesus. You do not need to trust their behaviors to understand them. Their history will present itself to you through their actions. And their feelings of being weak and undeveloped will be a catalyst for their torment.

“Author, there is a perfectionist within every person. And in that self-concept of perfection is their anti-personality self. That is what you will understand next.” The man of time then said, “You will reason with their shadow selves. Discuss their strengths in perfection and see how the anti-personality self responds to you. They will impulsively protect their karmic position and speak half-truths about their immortality.

“There needs to be a bit of pity there to help ease their standards and have some humility, as humility would allow them to gain a realization of themselves. Speak to their hearts. The anti-personality selves are not so much spiritual entities but are rather the cast-offs of curses they share with other people. Holy people will bravely look into their eyes and understand that, if they act stupidly, it is out of emotional outrage. Therefore, speak as you would from the heart, and talk to your spiritual family to hone your intuition.”

The man of time said, “They may do incredibly stupid things and say hurtful words. Be prepared, at times, for them to replicate the pain and torment that they have caused through their actions. Their display of emotions may not be subtle.

“Author, the kindness you share is only made known through prayer right now. In time, however, you will understand how the light in your heart will gain strength as you build tunnels for God to all people.

“There is nothing more for you to do for yourself to evolve into a higher consciousness,” said the man of time. You will begin to dissect and analyze the people around you and exhibit your attitude only to help them succeed in life. Care not if you do not help them if they are only interested in themselves and unresponsive to your higher calling. This will occur more often than you might expect.”

The man of time continued, “Author, you have your map and golden staff to work with. It has been explained to you in detail how you may use these items, how time is perceived and projected onto a plane of existence, and how you command your decisions thereafter. However, Author, you may

utilize these gifts to the benefit of others as well. Let me explain.

“The staff itself commands logic and helps you use your intuition to guide your decision-making through a connection with the spirit world. However, if there ever is a need to command the hearts of others, you can flip the poles within their hearts. You can imagine a pole in the person’s heart, moving over and around inside their heart. This magnetizes their perceptions and draws them into the moment. If they awaken to this subtle shift between your prayers and the shift of the magnetic pole in their heart, then you may align their motives with yours.

“The map, as you know, provides orientation. If you see that the person’s nature is directed within themselves and you see them going through patterns in life, you can analyze whether that person is weakened along any of the three axes. As you’ll recall, the axes run from memory to abstraction, from extroversion to introversion, and from logical to creative patterns. You can help others build their identities by making both their strengths and weaknesses known. Let them understand that balance in the heart is the primary motivation to maintain, since that is where our judgment comes from.

“Now, Author, your prayers for those in purgatory are in fact helpful for anyone in low spirits. However, trust must be given cautiously, as you need to protect yourself. Do no harm to the neighbor who loves God.

“There will be moments when Jesus intervenes in the conversation, which will lead to moments of ease and grace. If you shine your light by offering the inspired love of the

heavens whenever you are around the other person, then Jesus may enter into that person's heart. Understand that Jesus may come to these people in judgment, or he may come as you share your love and light, as you help direct a tunnel between them and the heavens.

“Author, there are moments when you will be able to express your deepest concerns to the other person in heart-to-heart conversations. For that to occur, a person who needs love and guidance must be willing to listen. Offering your peace and compassion is the way to help them. Let Jesus enter into the conversation by speaking through your love. There is no other information needed for you to be able to help other people. Jesus will offer his justice at this point.”

The man of time continued, “Author, there will be a moment in which you will understand your place in the heavens and on Earth. The patterns you seek to live by will be guided by love.”

I remembered then what was said by Jesus, that he would walk with me through the valley of the shadow of death. His footsteps will lead me through my lifetime.

“Author, there is only one other idea to explain here, and that is the surprise of other people, as you are considered a good and wholesome person. In those moments when you guard yourself and defend yourself in opposition to competition, remember that pattern of guilt or shame. This is because you are willing to help overtly. The devils will attack that shame you carry.

“You must believe in what you value and stand for. The people around you will adjust to you as well. And in that moment of connecting to others and standing up for what you

believe in, through the name of the Lord, you will understand why the staff was called a crook.

“Your leadership will be a splendor for the heavenly forces. And in a way, it will also benefit those who suffer in purgatory in their karmic shadows. Do not be afraid of using the three axes of time to orient the conversation. And if you are pressured to make decisions, use care in how much you are willing to direct. You have built connections around you to help in the world. Allow these people to help carry on the narrative that Jesus offers to us in the heart. Bond with those in love and through adversity.

“Author,” said the man of time, “you might understand society as something of a dream. It can be challenged to become something worthwhile, in principle, to Jesus. It takes effort and disciplined values to suggest the vision of what should manifest itself. The ideas of one become influential to more. And those influential people might help even more people in a ripple effect of Jesus’ love and guidance.

“In the future, there may be difficulties outside your control. However, through a legacy and willingness to befriend those who love the spiritual heavens, you may start a response that effectively resonates with the masses. Therefore, the pollution of the waters and the devil’s temptations will have less effect, overall. In karma, the forces of good might share enough light to stop the curses that people create for each other.

“In that future, the spirits on Earth may stay in the heart to rebalance over time to love their conscious voices enough and maintain their heavenly dispositions. It sounds illusory

now, but any significant effort toward this outcome is of love of the Lord.”

The man of time then allowed the light to elevate his consciousness. In that moment, the era of man growing as a light scholar was developing, a new era of humanity. One in which I wanted to help lead.

“Author, in time you will understand much more about how to connect with others through light. But in principle, you can focus on sharing light in another person’s heart and reorienting them to Jesus’ love. That is the fundamental concept to start with. And by living your values, you will showcase how much you care for your surroundings.

The Battle Between Good and Evil

Part One

There is the night. And in that night is slumber. The slumber of all the souls who are not yet awakened to the Lord's spirit. And in the night, there is a difficult past, but no one who is sleeping knows how their actions hurt others. To the degree they feel that pain, the actions lead the others to shut down and morally sleep as well.

In the night, the serpent sleeps on a pile of gold that is its abode. This wealth is in fact a cause of insanity that either drives others mad or starves them for the serpent's attention, making them loyal subjects to him. And the ones who protect themselves from the serpent, those who choose to rebuff the evil and stay good and wholesome, they are cursed by their own bravery. But those who remain in slumber remain loyal and fixated on a different kind of wealth – their own personal, immortal legacy. This aspiration to follow a path that is dim and tempting confuses both the loyal and the good people. This is because the good ignores the evil, and yet the evil, at times, manipulates the good.

The evil in the world knows how the positive and holy think and manipulates the circumstances to pressure them into making mistakes. This pressure is growing, gaining an upper hand, and emerging from the shadows to torment the good and holy people.

Within the world are people with strong character, who are positive and holy. Yet they stay away from evil so they can maintain the nobility that they perceive as their natural state. But the most natural form of evil is temptation. No one has a

natural inclination to fight the temptations in life unless they are connected through a spirit.

The Holy Spirit provides an understanding of faith, of how God works in life. Yet, the devil, also known as the serpent, is not aware of any inkling of light and love in the pursuit of higher ideals. The temptations the devil uses are cheap tricks of the mind to implant thoughts into memories. Each person battles the good and the evil, fighting back and forth between these two worlds. Each has two halves, and these have different masters. The actions taken between a nurturing God and a natural devil cause the total annihilation of a person's perspective. But trying to do no wrong and think nothing wrong causes the fear that leads people to not act on their own beliefs.

The devil can stand up to God for only a short time before the light of the heavens intervenes and reveals the truth in all its lies. Those lies then create the need for repentance because people make mistakes when they believe the devil's lies and fall for his temptations.

The idea of karma can frighten those who are in need of repentance. It is up to each person to find the strength of the Holy Spirit and to have faith stronger than the devil's temptations. For each person, this spiritual warfare begins the battle through which humanity's lessons can be understood.

The battlefield is here and now, in the present moment. And the material of life embodies this battlefield.

Although you are vulnerable, you are not helpless. All people, birds, and beasts share a light and shadow side, and all of them have agency. Do not let go of hope, even the embers of hope. But learn how to protect yourself in this battle.

To begin to understand how to go about choosing a pattern of protection, building a layer of alter ego is useful. The alter ego provides a psychological space between you and the people in your surroundings. The alter ego is what people have chosen to be shown, and their actions follow suit.

The alter ego is a face worn to brave the natural elements of the surroundings. This alter ego is a façade through which we share what we would like to become in this world. And in this layer is space where we can decide how we fortify our battle armor for spiritual warfare.

The evil enjoys tempting you through pain. Your response must be to bravely accept these new approaches and learn what intentions the people, birds, and beasts have for you. Their evil intent is born of competition arising from self-interest. Therefore, the greed, lust, and deceit contemplated or carried out by an evil being, shadow or real, are also considered by you, reader.

You must work hard to maintain your alter ego. Do not let the evil beings tempt you into letting this alter ego down. Those who pursue their self-interests will use the knowledge they have to gain more information for their cause. But when you feel pressure to collapse to the targeted insults, pain, or destructive patterns from the devilish shadows, through your bravery, you will gain more knowledge to foster your faith.

To correct the shadows and evil beings requires humility. Having an alter ego of good and wholesome qualities requires this knowledge. It also requires using care in building your alter ego to be less self-centered and more in line with the heart's door to Heaven. There is a space between the knowledge your spirit provides to your mind in life and in

the heavens. This layer of space is a casing that protects your spirit from the universes. The spirit is in the heavens, giving you advice through the conscious voice within you. And reader, the conscious voice is your intuition, telling you to continue to fight and learn bravely through humility.

There are going to be experiences in life orchestrated by evil. It is unfortunate that people must experience any pain in life, but the consciousness is trained to learn from this and grow to a grander scale of faith in Jesus. Therefore, the lessons we are faced with continually cause us to wake up to new phenomena in the spiritual realm. This awakening is self-growth.

All people will be tempted, not only by the devil itself, but also by the shadowy beings in their surroundings. These beings will haunt your memories and cause you to deny those lessons, telling you to learn instead through denial or moral sleep. The shadows provoke your weaknesses and tempt you for their own selfish interests. To trust them is to live in pursuit of self-interest and away from God. Therefore, you must learn to find protection through the alter ego to weather the battlefield of evil versus good.

Be a soldier in this fight between all that is evil and good. Command yourself as necessary at times to let the Holy Spirit talk for you with magnetized tongue. Your spirit is involved in learning from these life lessons as well. Understanding life is interesting from the spirit's perspective. Gaining enemies and loved ones will occur no matter how perfect you believe yourself to be. Therefore, understand how the Holy Spirit and spirit motivate your consciousness to ac-

tion. This faith in the Holy Spirit is necessary to move in secret ways, using intuition to understand others' motivations.

There is no justice in the world without the response of a judge. The judge examines the surroundings and the actions forming a being's patterns to determine their predilections and motivations. Justice is served based on both the patterns sought and the history fulfilled. In any case, the judge is powerful in dictating to which side the scale leans. The actions of every being in their surroundings are either benevolent or hideously detrimental. The scale is not swayed by bias but tipped only by the detached findings of the judge.

The organization of society arises from law. And the laws protect the people, birds, and beasts from irrational or detrimental behavior that arises from the evil within society. Protection is made available to the masses, who maintain society's status quo. When the people in society abide by the laws, the status quo is the leverage that lawmakers have over the masses.

Therefore, the evil in the surroundings is separated and held apart from the masses who live within the laws. This imprisonment is part of the enforcement of rules that cling to a person's behavior patterns. There is more to the role of the judge though, in that they escalate the questionable behavior past the leaders to a master of none. That is, the highest voice of spiritual understanding is past the laws and in concert with the attributes of the citizens of the masses.

In a trial of those who live beside the evil person who breaks the law, the citizens who expect to be in neighborly association with the law-breaker come to understand the

ways and the expectations that help reinforce practical judgment.

The good and the evil in society are represented in this judgment. Yet, the challenge for everyone in society is to understand the phenomenon of good versus evil. Not all laws can be enforced to the perfect balance of the scales of justice. Largely, the scales are used in death, where there is a perfect attitude of love and torture for those dwelling in the spiritual plane of existence.

There are many who have gone to the spiritual heavens without understanding how their lives affected their histories and karmic patterns. Without consulting the judgment of the Lord, there is no understanding of spiritual concession and grace. Therefore, looking from the orderly aspects of the spiritual to the embellished judgment on Earth only gives an illusion of what Heaven should be like on Earth, as we just accept that the devil will torment the population through loose rules of greed and lust.

The history of the Lord shows an example of Heaven on Earth. But there is a lesson to be learned from how well he was received during the messages he shared. He was often jeered for understanding his father as God. In his case, the rules of society were to be shifted for the Earth to accept its king.

Within all of us is a pattern of behavior that is questioned by those we live around. It is rational to feel a sense of security through the professional enforcement of laws. However, the system we have settled on is far from perfect. There are laws that need to be replaced. Torn and restitched to bet-

ter reflect Heaven on Earth and to provide a judgment that is just.

The aspects of each person's personality correlate to their position along three directing planes, which run up and down, forward and backward, and left and right. Each person's relationship with the law, including how they feel about it, use it, and learn from it, differs based on the positioning of their personality traits on the various axes. Take, for example, the x-axis running between logical and creative thinking patterns. Those who think logically display an understanding of how, and how far, the rules can shift in their favor. On the other hand, those on the creative side of the spectrum look for ultimate precision in creating a balanced understanding of their surroundings.

In society, the good look at what is currently wrong with the way the rules are established and justify in a jury of thought and action how to change society to elicit more ethical behaviors.

There are those who are logical, who write and cast rules from a critical standpoint, eager to judge society by dissecting and dwelling on the actions of other individuals. Each person plays the game of life by how loose or closely they follow the laws.

And in the master of blind justice, the rules or laws of society are organized to determine who stays in power.

People facilitate order by following the laws. But the way they need to serve the Lord is through the heart. And in that grace and concession to their behavior in life, they must also begin to awaken to their spiritual lives. It is not the masses who have gone before who will be the final judge in Heaven,

but Jesus. And in that moment of awareness will be a savior in the Lord. Living according to his rule is our servitude.

People who lead spiritual lives live by a code of honor. This code is to attempt to bring Heaven to the Earth, or the Earth to the heavens.

Depending on which side of the heart's door you reside, the heart can pull from the world examples and lessons to teach you about yourself. The nothingness of the surroundings inspires miracles that are creative and beneficial. These moments may be serendipity or a conscious resonance of values that changes the atmosphere in the surrounding world.

To make it obvious how the rules of Heaven challenge the order of society, we establish our organization of faith. These circles of prayer are on par with the heart of the community. The community bears the fruit of friendship and love, as the community fosters well-being with one another, living out the golden rule. This state of grace is what the law-makers need to set as their ideal.

How then does Heaven overlap with the rules of the community to create a rippling effect of prayer? This is the state between Heaven and the surrounding behaviors, and it increases behavior in line with positive and good culture.

The gate of the heavens is viewable to those with spiritual understanding. Those who lead in creating and updating the laws of the community should then create a vision within their abilities that the masses support.

For society, the balancing of the scales of justice is then both in understanding laws and spirituality. How do the patterns of evil and good people differ in ways that test this evolving government?

The evil are of a rule-bending and breaking nature, where all things are cast upon their individualistic decision-making. They torment others due to the illusion of control, the illusion of their own immortal, god-like vitality. But the torment of the soul is what ensues, and the laws of society must adapt to growing concerns of justice.

Good and holy people are not aware of how evil others become when they allow pressure to build around them. And the good and holy listen and adapt to these conversations while demanding a systemic change to take place, to align with the heavens. Society must reflect on how God's paradise would exist in the laws as currently designed.

There is the night. And in that night, there is a similarity to the daytime, without the light. This appreciation, and sometimes copying the notions of those holy and good, can be thwarted. But herein lies the discussion for such things.

On the y-axis, there is an appreciation of evil versus good, which balances the nobility of each person involved in their surrounding community. And the noble fight for those within the light and deceive those in darkness. The evil is the pressure felt for secrets about the light. And in a dark, suggestive dwelling of materialism, the evil makes its presence known through humor, pain, and torment.

The light bends and shapes itself to these shadowy people, beasts, and birds. As all things happen in life, the shadows develop unnoticed and engulf those evading their trials by the jury. They become loyal to the serpent, against the good and holy, and their presence is seen as multiplying the strength of the tribe.

The pressure put on people to announce their secrets for others to then take their own possession is fierce. And in that pressure to upend the other half – the noble – those who put the pressure on sink further into despair because they lack what others have.

The noble, however, can sink into the depravity of spirit. And in that quest to understand the life of nobility in a world that looks to them as though they'd hit rock bottom, they understand that it is in their better judgment to find and follow with appreciation those who lead them in noble wisdom. That search for wisdom becomes the daytime. The thirst to understand a greater truth continually fuels this purpose in their lives, but it is fueled by this purpose as well.

There is also another half to the nobility – the good and surreal expectations they meet for themselves. In their search to understand their weaknesses, the good seek to lower that noble purpose and understand the night. This search for the darkness to understand their truth becomes one with it in spirited conversations.

The night can become a fixation for the good and holy. And the shadowy people who are trained to prey for their master's benefit, and for their own, utilize this fixation to welcome the good and holy to the fire.

The pressure to be perfect in life pushes against the pressure to understand secrets as the two opposing ends of the conversation between good and evil. Understanding this conversation is helpful to anyone who bests their alter ego as the barrier before committing to trust.

The alter ego is a character created by a person to provide space for them to understand life in their surroundings. This

filter and barrier between oneself and the people around them helps them understand how to proceed with purpose. The purpose in the case of the reader is to benefit themselves by using their imagination to create a lifestyle worthy of themselves and God.

The heavens then lead the spirit to provide intuitive feelings through emotions to guide the person, and therefore their ego, in the spiritual battlefield that shapes the conversations between evil and good.

The guidance is on another level for those who are good and holy. These individuals use their nobility to answer to God's Word. And in that understanding, by listening to the words being called to the people of the Lord, and maintaining a compassionate heart, they learn that nobility is the fountainhead of spirit. The rebirth into this world, as the imagination predicts what is going to happen in the mind, is useful preparation for what is to come.

The alter ego then is the concept that answers, as a filter, in the form of direction. It acts as a barrier when people are listening and actively engaging in the conversations with the people surrounding them. Do no harm to yourself, and pray to God for answers to help increase the barriers within the alter ego.

The nobility of having an upright character that is seen by the surrounding world as strong and brave is of one's own making. The psychological aspect of the alter ego then is reinforced through consistent behavior. And these patterns of behavior that reinforce the alter ego essentially build the personality program within one's mind and heart.

Consciously driving from the heart also involves a positive aspect of communicating, in the context of good and evil communication. The good is driven within the heart, and the mind is where evil is understood. Therefore, the nobility is the voice, articulating which side of the equation, heart or mind, has command. The heart allows you to be brave and carefree in conversations with other good people. And the mind can be rigid, offering defensive patterns in attitude when evil presents itself. The words chosen are of a higher order in the world, which helps others understand our thoughts and behaviors. But choosing the right methods from the heart or brain is fundamental to protecting oneself and staying true to one's identity, the ego.

There are similarities between all people who have both light and dark sides to their personality. Yet, through training, understanding the evil in the world can protect a person from offering their secrets for others to either incriminate or steal from them. And, by using the imagination, by staying in the mind, the alter ego helps provide a barrier against harm. This allows space to think for oneself and present a stern command of oneself through their personality.

The good and holy fight outward from within. The basis of this is not to be a perfectionist but to serve a purpose for the heavens on Earth. This behavior demonstrates an understanding of nobility to a world that lacks an understanding of that purpose. Leading people to a good and holy purpose takes heart. That is where fun and enjoyment occur.

On the z-axis, the world works as part of a system in which there is the communication of evil and good. This basic level understanding can help all in the world present

themselves with nobility and purpose while standing rigid in their good and holy beliefs.

There is the idea that nothing at all exists below the filament of the heavens. That, in the polluted pools where grace still befalls those who have fallen, those words of God are often ignored. And that those in the heavens cannot do much more than intervene in life to save the world by imparting a heart-and-mind balanced approach.

There is this idea as well that each person must take risks on their own and make choices, through the possession of their own will, and dictate the outcome as well, in an effort to understand their surroundings. A person's surroundings in life are of great consequence when they apply their efforts and willpower against the elements. Therefore, the opening between both masters, good and evil, is a pathway to outcomes only known to the spiritual realms. And both masters play a part in the life of an individual who is torn, either helping them gain good and sacred knowledge, or leading them to accept the interference of a self-made construct, where their personal needs remain at the forefront of their thoughts.

The debate within oneself of good versus evil is not purely societal or interpersonal, as has been implied until now. It is interwoven throughout the time we have had through our genetic link, going back to the beginning of the world through the fall of mankind. And this separation and collapse, after the universes began to shrink and expand, became a revision of history through the perception of each individual in their sense-making capacity.

As we evolve, the time and place we are in shifts into a new paradigm as we learn to navigate our surroundings in our lifetimes. And the evolved state of mankind reflects new knowledge gained and prepares us for the next hurdles we are about to tackle. And yet, the places, things, birds, and beasts around us falter not in response to our improvisation and willpower. They also become elevated or fall behind in their knowledge and their reaction to people in a chain of life and death. This cycle of willpower of the living world surrounds us in our elemental settings. We are products of nature versus nurture, and sometimes both intervene through our evolution, meaning that we care for and command the surroundings through our sheer attempts to right the world through personal viewpoints and mastery.

The world and all its surroundings do not care for each and every human life. And yet, God nurtures each of us as His children. That is because we are known to Him as part of His spirit. To fall from His graceful love is horrid. And those who shun God's love in the natural setting of this earth without ever questioning their own immortality will live in torment. They have already recycled immeasurable amounts of pain into the world through their own misguided attempts to prove themselves godly.

The evil in this world is only amplified by those who dispel God from their consciousness and cause torment to others, along with themselves. They lead others in the world in evil persecution, and they attempt, through pressure, to understand their own mastery of situations. They know nothing and seek no new knowledge of the spiritual realm.

God does not understand those efforts and shuns them into a karmic re-bath in the polluted waters. The cycles of death and life are a conversation only the person who suffers pain and torture understands. They realize their own punishment from the years of self-praise and promotion at the expense of others. This carries forward through their devotion into their next lifetimes. Their history is on record in the book of the universes. Their records show that they endure repeated punishment until they learn in their lifetimes how to be loving.

The balance between evil and good in a system of “reality” is of mankind’s making. People project themselves into the world through spirit, and they use their sense-making abilities to choose how to behave. Whether it is at the expense of their surroundings or in harmony with the spiritual realm, this is their choosing.

The equation is balanced by measuring talent, thus determining reality and the dominant side, the mind or the heart. Each person’s strengths and weaknesses are tested. And to brave the world and overcome the natural elements, one must be in spiritual alignment with nature. But the elements all have a good and holy aspect to them, since they are also conscious. They repeatedly care for and communicate with their own, using their sense-making abilities to foster a harmonious web of life. Respect for the nurturing aspects of life is a commonality shared by all living systems.

Therefore, when joining in the debate on how to move forward in life, or deciding on how to protect oneself by formulating an alter ego and engaging in patterns of behavior,

careful thought and strategy must be used to decide on a balance.

The strategy for constructing the alter ego involves creating a vision for the future based on past elements. After thoughtful deliberation is given on the history of the circles of life in the surroundings, strategy is then implemented to effectuate this merger of the wisdom and imagination occurring through individualistic self-exploration. To expect nature and the surroundings in life to bend and simply follow any individualistic effort is insanity. Knowing that and continuing to pretend to be the basis of all the good in the world is an illusion of immortality.

By identifying the history and compassionate outlook to formulate the strategy for the alter ego, whether these are from individualistic ideas or greater inclusion of other like-minded beings, those deciding on the fate of a vision are better served. This service to staying within the power of nature and spiritual nurture is wholesome.

The ultimate secret to making good decisions does not depend on whether a person prioritizes themselves or their surroundings in conversation, but whether they balance both aspects of consciousness and listen to their intuition in the heart. To have this understanding of the heart is to follow the word of God. And in that moment when all things reside in God's love, there is peace.

Understanding that anything in control of and having control over other beings is hateful. So much so that the torment of being ultimately immortal and godlike makes the pain recycle throughout the world in karmic patterns. The evil in this world is when one not only takes control but de-

cides the fate of others purely out of self-interest and with little understanding of spiritual nurturing.

By knowing that spirit connects into the world through the heart, there is an obvious prayerful wisdom that inspires purpose. That purpose is not only to benefit the world around us through our connection to a web of life, but also to be nurtured by God and the heavens. This self-perpetuating balancing and rebalancing of nature and nurture is then understood as both the catalyst for and the outcome of people making decisions for their ultimate vision. The future should involve cycles of listening to the heart and experiencing joy and love, with moments of serendipity intervening, and with God's invisible hand welcoming peace into each conscious being in the environment.

There is a way to understand the three axes as a means of maintaining a singular viewpoint on how to protect oneself from evil pressure. The truth and vision of Heaven on Earth are found through the scales of justice.

The way forward then is to imagine how we, as a society, present evil as purposeful for addressing the concept of spiritual battle with other people and beings. To remake history in its own image but change the personalities in it would redo harm, over and over. A karmic shift in a positive direction and uplifting our message of spiritual battle can overcome the devastation of the hatred and lies.

The enemy is not the other person who is in spiritual harmony with us. They are those who prey on others and command that their own perspective be accepted as correct. Their perspective is unholy because there is only one God.

And He, the Father, is aware of the surroundings in pursuit of Eden on this planet.

The end vision is in sight then during a holy battle – that is to join with the spirituality of all and have none be the enemy. This reasoning is to love all, as one is able to, and to allow Jesus his spiritual judgment.

God will understand imperfections, but the lack of any dialogue with the heavens greatly complicates the evil in a particular person, tribe, or civilization.

There is a light that allows all things to understand this nature. And that light is blinding. It is of the Lord's judgment. It allows compassionate grace to usher in a new religion in the world under the guise of a secret. The real answer, though, is that light and truth win in all battles, always.

Therefore, the ending in a paradise on Earth can be reviewed on the scales by which our justice is upheld. The scales of human civilization are called into question. They came into existence, and each person was offered the chance to maintain a positive existence with God in their hearts. The tribes then offered the chance to understand pressure from evil. And that pressure is felt by all who exist in that society.

Understand that the realm of the living is doomed until that light of judgment is allowed into their consciousness. The light of the Lord can be sensed through the heart, and therefore, the mind.

The fears of those who do not understand that light spread their fear and darkness to those who are holy and good. In every conversation, the evil understand how they pressure and present facts to the holy and good. In every

tribe of evil, the people will commit crimes, thwarting not only themselves but the answers of God spoken by the holy and good people as well. This society is lost, as those who have power in criminal acts of terror reign as the chief architects of that civilization.

The universes are more in line with the positive than the negative on this planet, meaning that the subconscious and the good will win out because the understanding and learning of light from light scholars is favored. The light is of merit and jubilation. That honesty from the good will triumph over the crooked architects of a powerless civilization. The evil will never win in the universes. And the devil will not enter into the world's paradise either.

To be victorious, there is a lesson here to understand – that justice is of a spiritual heaven for everyone. That those who pressure the good for their secrets will listen to the light of God's Word and be affected. And that the heavens will build a paradise into each conversation within the judgment of humanity before the Lord.

The misery of each person is a layer of selfish undercurrents from their own behavior. They may not understand the layer of selfishness there, but still live in pursuit of ideals that relate only to their own desires. This is because the evil in society is bent to the shape of leaders who want their presence to be felt and who want to command an outcome of personal goals. And because those goals are ultimately selfish, the masses should attack in thoughts and prayers.

If one civilization engages in behavior seeking to begin wars with others, then the leaders must hold the scales of justice upon their own heads. This idealization of good ver-

sus evil in the decisions made must be weighed honestly and without bias to win in God's invisible hands.

The knowledge of good and evil is a paradoxical weight on the crown of the leaders and therefore, on others who carry out orders for that vision.

The wars between civilizations can and will be won through a reflection of peace on Earth. That is, God spreads His will to those willing to reflect His understanding and attributes to the world. There will be pressure on both sides of the war to campaign for and against certain positions. Weaponry is irrelevant when the war is over. There must be trust afterward to continue to build the ultimate belief that there is one command and that God is above all other perspectives.

The Lord's spirit is the way – the way that humanity must play in accordance with the notion that Paradise on Earth is a possibility and will ultimately be a reality. By appealing to the spirituality of every person, tribe, and society, the worldly command of a human population can be guided by the staff. Only then will the staff of a community of civilizations guide them forward to establish rules and laws that will allow for the negotiation of peaceful qualities in governance.

The light in the world is enough for all to pray together in synchronicity, illuminating both halves – evil and good – that are allowed to occur in each society. There is a desire to allow evil to vanish from the world. However, the evil will continue to persist in society as long as there is a vision set for a worldly spiritual understanding. This natural inclination for each society to find connection and imagine how

evil will present itself in communications with one another will take time.

The people in each civilization will understand that trust can occur with others once society gradually shifts and transforms the rules and laws to eradicate evil from one another in a peaceful manner. Even in that transition to admitting that each civilization can improve its evil ways, the leaders must hold true to the beginnings of that world's spiritual understanding of God.

The paradise on Earth will occur in a timely understanding that way, because the story of communication and behavior is in line with God and not the actions of leaders in denial of Heaven.

Part Two

There is lunacy in nothingness. The lunacy of the spirit becomes one fixated on all things that are changed through self-compromise. During that time of hyperfocus is an awareness, sometimes to the point of paranoia, of being taken advantage of by those who have been given power. This worrisome attitude then creates a psychological break in the spirit, and in the heart and mind.

The world around us can be daunting. To you, the reader of this story, in particular, you need to be aware of the dangers posed by your surroundings. The worry of all that can affect you and harm you can make you enter a self-preservation mode. This pressure, this evil around you, it is in fact the way most everyone tends to feel, somewhat regularly. However, the situation around you, reader, may become so intense that your sense of worry rises to levels of pure paranoia for prolonged periods, even years at a time.

The spiritual battle will ensue within your fragmented and often severed connection within the heavens. This broken link to the spirit is lunacy. It is a state where no light seeps into the world or your surroundings to help inform your judgment. This then, reader, is when you are swallowed up by the serpent itself. You have and become nothing but a spiritual darkness within yourself, and you search only to understand consistency enough to manage your lifetime.

The beauty of this moment is that it does not last forever, as it might seem. Reader, the moments or years of spiritual darkness are times when you can ask for the spiritual

strength to manage the chaos around you in a holy order. This can be explained.

The moment when you are fully engulfed within the belly of the beast is one where you need to muster your strength, as this is a place where imagination and love do not exist. This test of self-reliant strength is a trial of life you must endure before you are delivered to God once more. Searching as a positive being of light-filled void then is the actualization of the return to the heavens on Earth in this lifetime. Therefore, reader, the lunacy of evil and the comfort of good are found in the personal stories of many throughout this world. However, if for any length of time you do not feel connected to the spirit, know that it is a heavy burden you must carry to experience a glorious communication with the Lord.

Reader, the evil in this world is of unknown capacity. Those who go in search of evil, knowing that it exists and it humiliates those holy and good, must imagine something much darker than their own lunacy. The holy and good can see the devils around them if they are swallowed by the serpent. As the good interact with the evil, the spiritual transformation across generations and over lifetimes is much like a metamorphosis of beauty and strength of the light from within.

Reader, there is a way through this that is documented and told through the scriptures. It is to remain in God's favor by placing the Father first in your thoughts. This idealism and hopefulness in spite of the situation brings angels to the darkness, where their presence is felt through the transmission of spirit.

The angels are messengers of a constant source of love and affection who comfort and console during the most intense conversations of dark versus light. Those experiencing lunacy in the heart and mind have nothing but the fear of their surroundings to fight against. That, and the internal drive to understand that there are angels praying in the heavens for a release into the natural world, with God welcomed into the heart and mind afterward.

Only a handful of those around us experience sainthood in this lifetime. They are constant sources of positivity, even in the darkest hours. And in those moments of struggle and fear, they decide to believe with full faith that they have a savior in the Lord.

There is more to the lunacy of the mind and heart. Lunacy is a struggle with and lack of self-understanding. The mind has no imagination to play constant simulations of a projected personality. It is a machine that worries about being harmed by others. Oh, readers, the faith beyond others and believing that good and love exist is the only ounce of faith left for the lunatic. And if they keep that love alive, they may manage to love their surroundings enough to overcome the curses levied upon them.

This strength and beauty of love is a direction in which God steers these faithful, positive, holy people. And in the moments when they cannot understand evil and the world, they are given grace. In fact, the moment they find themselves lying prone and downcast, with nothing more than the tattered clothing on their bodies, they are gifted a moment with God.

Understand, reader, that this moment brings release from bondage. Release from making excuses for not living a purposeful life. The holy and good people are offered the chance to repent, and thereafter, to live out a lifetime filled with passion.

As they lie in the nothingness of spiritual darkness, when the prayer they have received then is answered, it is up to those individuals to accept that connection with God. And in that moment when all the heavens intervene in the lifetime of the lunatic, the harm caused by the feelings of uncertainty and doubt begins to heal.

The beginnings of the light-inspired life are part of the origin of the light of the heavens. The tunnel of light and love then connects the person with the heavens in a way that was understood by Jesus. This connection to the Garden of Paradise can be described as a bridge of sound across the universes into a new era of mankind. The Paradise on Earth is found by the person leaving the spiritual darkness. In despair or reconciliation, the faithful person can eat of the Tree of Life once more.

There is a logic from the light of Jesus. This logic is within the mind and heart of those who have suffered for the Lord. And in any appointment in life from the heavenly realm to conduct the work of God's hand, there is immense ability and talent.

Being engulfed within the belly of the beast, and full of anger and paranoia, is a prison that grows weak as the person grows to understand their gifts. This means that, for a person who is talented, in a world full of those who are morally asleep, the gifts keep a healthy passion alive.

There are tools available in this lifetime that are useful for any attempts to serve the Lord and to reach others. The map is one such useful tool. This map can help balance out the forces of those who are out for or who exert pressure on others. As the forces become balanced, the overlapping circles of negativity and positivity can be seen on the map as a record of the process. And in time, the patterns of negativity and positivity will align with those of the Holy Lord.

The map might be hard to distinguish within the prison of Hell on Earth. Yet the light of reason will allow the imagination to visualize how the world may react in this cube of space and time. The projection of this visualization onto the world is carried in thought while the mind and heart make the universes real.

The supernatural feel of the occurrences in this lifetime seems theatrical. Those with the talents and gifts to reach God and hold conversations may understand the magnetism of their own words. Yet, for most, the truly divine inspiration to help the masses understand God is a passionate pursuit.

The spiritual darkness then begins to dissipate when the prison walls are understood as the dimensions of a cube. The three axes composing these dimensions can be explained in terms of social understanding, social communication, and society building. This chapter of social understanding of spiritual light in a cube of darkness is then in line with justice on a scale of godly proportions.

God understands how each person struggles in their moments of spiritual darkness. And in that conversation where a person learns of the bridge to Eden and the Tree of Life, the holy aspect of light versus dark emerges for that person.

The evil in the pressures put on people then is understood by the pain it has caused others in the past. And the motivations of those evil people then repeat through the infliction of pain on others in escalating patterns of harm. And due to this continuation of evil in society, the serpent understands how it can tempt the unknowing with promises to fulfill their greed and lust.

There is a map for those who understand these evil intentions because they know how the evil people understand the world. The spiritual person who has experienced the light in the darkness by talking with God can and will understand how to mount a defense against the evil ones.

Within the society, a spiritual karma builds walls to reinforce the prison for those who put excessive pressure on other people. When there is pressure to identify weaknesses and take advantage of and control those who are good and holy, God intervenes. He builds the walls in life for people who engage in those behaviors and allow the evil to congregate in Hell's domain.

The good and holy can protect themselves and fight back if they understand how evil is pressuring them and how they can use their gifts and talents. The gifts that allow people to remain in God's light and subject their actions in accordance with the intentions of the Lord are outstanding. The Lord is the creator of our heavenly experience through the gates of Paradise. Therefore, the good and holy use patterns and seek the intuition of the map to prepare themselves to withstand the pressure.

Reader, there is a trial where damnation and Heaven rest on the scales of the Lord's judgment. The wicked are impris-

oned by their own karmic past for putting pressure on those who are good and holy. Those who are heavenly experience this evil pressure as well, and they pursue the Lord's assistance to light their path. This lifetime is therefore about setting the foundation for the walls of those prisons that we make for ourselves based on the heavenly judgment.

These walls, however well defined, also become a reality because the mind and heart make it so. The judgment of God is created and carried out throughout the people, beasts, and birds in the surroundings. The balance of the overlapping circles is the tool concisely represented in the map. The logic of the Lord is tracking the patterns of the circles of the living beings and preparing them for Hell or Heaven.

The arrangement of the circles is magnetized by the beliefs of those who understand evil and good and who act to thwart the evil and protect the good. Those who understand evil but are good may help a good and holy person figure out how they can build up their bravery for facing new evils in their lives.

This prescriptive knowledge about society and how the laws and rules work together can be modified for each individual, given their record. The patterns of evil and good are tracked and formally supported with documentation where a government system exists. And in that understanding of giving and taking, a course of higher logic in line with the judgment and betterment of society, each person can realize their place either in prison or as part of a healthier society.

Therefore, in a society that views the Lord's logic of evil versus good as the ultimate trial of one's lifetime, tracking the

good and holy and supporting their activities can help them identify their gifts and talents.

There will always be evil, but understanding this logic can lessen the threat of evil over time. Being aware of the evil and preparing these individuals for the path of the prison, and keeping them on a track of responsibility and nourishment, is holy and good. Explaining to them how they can reach God by using intuition and speaking their truth can assist them in their lives. The good serve those who have light. And in a logic where all become nourished on these laws, the individual framework will overlap into one concise map.

Let the intuition of the Lord's logic guide the making of this tracking system. And let the law and order of the system meet the specific individualistic needs for every decision. The measure and arrangement of pressure and creation in each person's life will be defended. And each person will answer for their positioning along the axes and the thickness of the walls built to imprison them.

There is an axis that will form a wall to be built within the prison that can affect a person's communication with society. Communication with society is how the person interacts in such a record-keeping system as the Lord's logic, regardless of whether they are evil or good.

Therefore, there is a program that understands the circles that overlap each other. These circles are then the negative and positive circles of pressure inward and ability outward. The arrows on the circles point inward or outward, depending on how much favor is cast on each. This can be explained.

The evil and good attributes of a person's life are balanced in the heart. And judgment for each person's trial is

rendered by the community. Therefore, the community is the heart, whereas the government is the mind. They are very much intertwined with each other, yet are completely distinct from each other. It is a feudal system in which the communities build their prayer circles with what help they can call upon to manage their resources and offer schooling to the people. Thus, the communities can dictate what the response should be to the acts of each person.

The community defines what each person should strive for in terms of their livelihood. Those options are based on what resources are available to each community. The humility each person maintains and the transparency in their work are heavenly attributes. The good and noble are then afforded more emphasis on their good and holy circle in the record system. The community leadership should take note and offer individual learning structures based on the amount of talent put to use for God. And in that circle of positivity, the good remains in line with an achievable purpose.

The negative circles are far heavier on the record of the person who remains in a prison of their own device. This can only be evaluated through a reflection of their record by the community. This reflection and careful examination constitute a trial, wherein the leaders of the community must weigh what is in the record as they investigate further to gather more information about the person. The person is then offered opportunities to achieve balance in life by estimating how much pain they have inflicted on others and making amends with those people.

The record system is then a ledger of positive and negative circles that each person can rely on to keep a noble heart.

The system is akin to a virtual projection and prison, with each individual able to gain freedom in their lifetime.

Each person can train in the community to perform particular roles as well. There are different chambers in a community, as there are in the heart. Each leader, community member, or guardian has a particular purpose, like that in Heaven. The interaction between the community and government is also reinforced through the expectations of each and how they respond to each other. Maintaining this interaction allows those in the community to be free at a local level while a record of each individual is kept by virtue of the government's mapping system.

The circles also have another attribute that helps people learn and grow. The rate of development of the learner can be estimated in the areas of evil and good. Determining this rate of growth for a light scholar is good and holy, in that it can prophesize who can lead prayer circles or engage in other meaningful opportunities. The active learner uses their imagination and compassion to lead the community where they are at, and to bring nobility to their active family, friends, and neighbors.

The active learners or light scholars are then those who learn and act in accordance with higher ideals for the system. They behave in a way that others can emulate. They should understand, at a time of great importance, how evil presents itself in the world. This understanding of evil is obviously utilized to protect the community.

Those who learn evil can be guardians of leaders. The guardians protect the community from the imposition of pressure and evil intent. Their role offers an opportunity to

communicate intentions and information to the leaders of other communities. They are peacemakers and fighters.

The leaders must understand levels of evil to foster the teaching of others about evil intent. The leaders are able to use humor and observation to train the community in how its members may falter to temptation or weaknesses. This informs a community member's understanding of how evil can affect how they live and cause them to falter in their own moral slumber. The leaders train those who are ready to take on a new level of purpose and who are strong in their faith. It is transformative.

There is a better world ahead for the civilization with a record system grounded in God's logic. The scales of the heavens are balanced based on how the people develop into their roles. And in that training of discipline and good behavior, the community offers education and the chance for repentance.

There is a narrow light in the community that develops as the creative and knowledgeable spiritual director. And the light scholar who fulfills this role engages in a godly pursuit of the knowledge of how the record system displays all people in the community. They also have the potential to work their way into the governance program. This transfer of leaders into governance is of extreme importance. The leaders in governance should have a working knowledge of both evil and good, and should be able to thwart temptations and deliver for the betterment of the communities at large.

These inspired light scholars who become government officials then understand their communities' weaknesses in relation to the surrounding world. They make difficult de-

cisions regarding how the communities must adapt to new rules and laws for the betterment of the world.

Within the lives of each member in the community exists a wealth of treasure. This wealth is of scarce resources and forms the basis of a trade system, which is the highway or tunnel of goods and services produced for the perpetuation of a greater governing system. And in that system of trade, each community depends on the others to reciprocate the exchange of services and goods to sustain their existence and support growth opportunities.

Within the community are people who have talents and possess knowledge about addressing the needs of those they live among. Their talents are governed by a universal system of record keeping. Thus, the heart is the action taken by the individuals who live in the community to optimize the use of the scarce resources they have. The community provides the support for that effort, but the resources are supplied through the system of governance. The land is shared then by all, through the governance system, which is capable of managing the use of resources on a large scale. Whether individually or through government work, those who make an effort to use resources effectively in services and products are offering a shared understanding of their talents and knowledge.

This effort by those who own the wealth and supply the most important services and products for the benefit of the people in the community shows self-reliance, as they have to provide for themselves in order to provide for others. And those who cannot create the products and services needed for the community depend on these people.

Because the community benefits from close residential proximity, the wealth in self-reliance is fundamentally property for all. Every individual strives to be self-reliant but also to trust in the good nature of those who can support them to meet all their needs and desires. The balance is an equilibrium of sorts within the community, of cooperation and satisfaction with what they have and what they contribute.

The primary aspect of the governing system then is the system of universal records. It allows the examination of the timeline of those in prison versus those working toward enlightenment. A system that monitors the trends of a person who commits evil acts shares in the responsibility for the poor memories and choices they make. This surveillance is strengthened when the evil inclinations and choices grow exceedingly poor. This system confines those ensnared community members into a cube when they need more support than they can provide for themselves. This help comes at the hands of the leaders, who choose how to approach the opportunities for repentance and forgiveness in grace.

The timeline for those working toward enlightenment is a period in which the good work toward maintaining and improving the governance system. Knowing where the resources are predicted to be in the future, the governing bodies can provide training programs to educate those for their livelihood efforts.

These timelines then are trends that go far beyond their respective lives. They are affected by generations of burdens within the family's history. This story then is to exercise the karmic attributes that would plague the individuals and offer a cleansing of the spirit toward enlightenment.

Effective education and training of individuals make the community more profitable by fostering more innovation and research. Through innovation, the community members improve their quality of life. Therefore, the educated are responsible for sharing their innovations and their knowledge about the product or service with the community. This expectation to share for the benefit of others has drawbacks, in that it keeps the wealth accumulation for individuals lower than in a monopolized society. However, the community protects itself with innovation and can deliberately trade that knowledge with other communities as a commodity. That intellectual property then provides a gateway for shared wealth with those they consider trade partners.

The major benefit of these trade tunnels or pathways is that, when the community provides enough wealth in products, services, and processes, it can raise its impact on the leadership positions in the governing system. The community can veto or approve the acts of the governing body, or the quality of the universal record system, by communicating with the leaders elected to the government.

More prisons tend to emerge in a community that does not work together with other communities in the governance system, as that part of the system becomes atrophied, like the neglected limb of an organism. Each community must show the willingness and ability to reciprocate with the other communities. This balance of self-reliance and dependence in trade reveals the organic function of each community that shares a common governance system.

The key comparison is the amount of resources that communities accumulate through their own performance

and those they receive in trade. This pulse of trade then constitutes the arteries to the land. There is no single individual who gains so much wealth that they own the land and convert the resources themselves. Instead, they own the tools and their processes, and they work among the community to share where necessary.

Effort is maximized through education and training. This combination of ability and intelligence is fundamental to the advancement of process design for the community.

The community has the freedom to fight the governance where there is a threat of tyranny. This conversation between the government and the community is determined by the nature of the community's soldiers. The guardsmen of the community can attempt to protect its members from a government that takes their property without offering adequate compensation, such as education, training, or support, in return. The response of the governing system is then judged and modified based on the verdict of a trial for the leaders who dictate how the resources are redistributed.

The leaders must show their thought process and compassion throughout the resource allocation. If war becomes inevitable, there must be fair attempts before the war to minimize the impact of the resource allocation, if deemed appropriate.

If war should break out, the evil behavior of those individuals who instigate an uprising will be easily identified in the governance system. In that case, if their message has little to no impact on changing the system, their actions are recorded, and their family name is disgraced. However, if there is merit to their message and they gain support from

other communities, they may be thought of as leaders who were able to affect how the system works. This revolutionary behavior can then motivate research and advance innovation, as it is viewed as something good.

The difference between these two acts of war is whether the individuals propose a solution that benefits the community.

There will come a morning in the future that will be humanity's uprising in peace and honesty. This truth that liberates the civilizations will come from an understanding of all things that have occurred and will be and have always been, progressing toward enlightenment. This record of humanity will become flawless, and this is an important aspect of the communities becoming whole through spirit. This morning in the future then will be the daytime in the paradise on Earth.

Jesus will be back in the flesh at times along the way to encourage this development of self-reliance and talent and governance. But the reliance on the heavenly light will supersede the effort of humanity. And searching within for that light will become the holiest endeavor of the communities. Searching and praying together will cultivate both the knowledge and honesty to share with each other how we as a people began as individuals stuck in lunacy in the belly of the beast, and came to be something much more collective.

The answers here concerning evil versus good then are important. Gaining mastery of knowledge of evil and testing the evil in one another for the sake of protection and strengthening weaknesses is not necessary, since it will be for the devil alone to tempt the people in their greed and lust.

The greed for wealth of abundance is, in some cases, jealousy of a neighbor's possessions and talents. However, attempts to curse other people will be thwarted to the extent possible in patterns of civilization, as these weaknesses of greed are not conducive to the advancement of the entire civilization.

And lust for the neighbor will be understood as pressure to gain something from the other person, to the extent that it goes beyond the training of evil in practice and wanting more from someone than they are willing to give. Thus, the devil will fail in the temptation of lust, due to the fact that light has been shown on the patterns of this evil to make the masses aware.

Therefore, it will be beyond today's generation that civilizations embody this outlook. However, through effort and constant education and training, the communities may come together and act in ways that cause the circles to overlap as they assist one another, so they might move toward a positive outlook.

The trial of Jesus to liberate everyone from the devil is difficult. However, the logic of the Lord is quite clear. Pressuring good and innocent people for the sake of gaining their secrets and habits, even in return for great command or control, is evil. There is a fine line between training to overcome evil habits and weaknesses and turning evil habits into a pattern that produces karmic repercussions.

Curses directed at other people from the heart are evil. These curses on other people are steps into that evil pattern.

How does one know fully that they have secured their own heavenly light and are enlightened? This knowledge is obtained through communication with God the Father.

However, it helps when prayers are for the neighbors in the community, as their suffering needs attention, and they are in need of compassion. The light expressed in Heaven and through the heart is shifted toward the other person through prayer. This light has been harnessed through the conversations and prayers with the Heavenly Father. And, as that light is offered spiritually to others, it can move together with the outward-facing direction of the act of being attentive to those neighbors' needs.

The application of the mirror to the act of being attentive to their needs is also compassionate. This is the point where good becomes a practice.

The devil itself will no longer exist in civilization as the mother of Jesus, Queen Mary, crushes its skull under the last crescent moon. This is symbolic of the last remains of the nightfall of evil in the future of civilization.

Jesus will return as the people pray together to the point that all hearts in the course of civilization are redeemed. This redemption through Jesus will occur after many generations of engaging in the practice of staying good and holy. These generations will live with wealth and abundance for three hundred years, whereafter the devil will make its final push to acknowledge the spiritual light of the Christ. The mother will then take the course of crushing its mind and heart and fulfilling the prophecy set out by the Heavenly Father.

As nothing leaves this universe, the redemption of all who are left in the paradise on Earth will be forever in the holy place.

The holy city will be final and restful. Where all will remain in eternity with the Heavenly Father, Son, and Spirit.

**THEATER OF EVERYDAY LIFE : A CHRISTIAN
PERSPECTIVE**

193

This leaves much improvement to occur. Yet shining light on the evil in this world will come as a great moral awakening. Let the redemptive period of civilization occur.

Competitive

Part One

There is a mourning of souls. A deep and sacred reaction to a moment where the realization that something is wrong within takes hold, and awakening reveals that there is more to living with purpose. This mourning of the soul is a treacherous feeling, as it shows that the expectation of happiness to be brought about in life just by living within oneself is nonsensical. The purpose felt and gained in life requires engagement with and among other people and the ability to communicate wants and needs. This means experiencing the vulnerability to feel wrong but also distinctly positive that an agency in the self would create or manifest a living that is much more meaningful.

This moment in each lifetime is where God comes and sweeps away our personal dreams and reveals the true answer to us. That what we want and think we need may be self-serving to the point that we become blinded and turn away from the trust and faith in the Savior and Lord. This awakening of the soul through the recognition of a purpose in line with the Holy Son is and will be a fascination that continues to nourish the soul.

There is a need to belong to the Savior. This understanding of God's Son as the Christ and Lord is very unique to each person. And in that regard, it is a personal relationship that begins and is strengthened by following the truth in the heart. The voice of consciousness in the heart amplifies the goodness of this purpose and allows the Lord to create an

environment where such vision of faith can be exalted. The feeling of praise becomes a passion to follow the Lord.

The Lord has given His direction for all who meet Him in their hearts to make adjustments. This direction is to serve not only the Lord but also His people on Earth. And there will be a moment of realization that people no longer think a certain way about themselves or the other people. This will be the moment of creation of a narrative for both, intertwined through God's wisdom, forming a glorious tapestry, as these hearts sing praise to those who hear the spiritual music around them. They feel the pulse of the creation story from within and join in this merriment. It is a special relationship of faith and effort that works from within, tying all together to become unified as one force, positive and holy.

The song that the people sing is much like a trumpet of angelic lore. Through that music, each of the followers of Christ shares in the story and instantly knows the wisdom of the heart. In that song and dance of faith, all negativity is overcome. Whether the dance is the interplay between competitors in life, or between brothers and sisters, becomes obvious. It is between everyone who is engaged in the behaviors of the Lord. The amusement and joy that incorporates such faith is wholesome and for the good of all.

So it is that all who listen to the heart and find a script to follow under the direction of the Lord are well nourished.

As this feeling is amplified into the surroundings for the good and wholesome people to understand, it becomes a beacon of friendship in prayer circles. These tunnels of love and light that are spiritual in nature connect us through prayer. The heart is aware of who is included in their love in

life. And when these prayers are answered through miracles, every person in the prayer circle gains strength. This abundance of harmonizing together is the feeling of oneness with the Father.

And so, reflection on the heart leads to an awakening, and a renewed faith. What was once hard to understand is now much easier to comprehend. Those feelings of intuition turn into truth-seeking behavior. And in that trust in the Lord, the music grows in merriment, growing much stronger with confidence. These values give us reason to rejoice and strengthen our trust in the Lord. The purpose for which the Lord directs us is one through which we establish the grace necessary for facing the constant negativity of life. We reflect positivity when we balance the mind with the heart. Thinking, therefore, with both heart and mind becomes an experience where loyalty and bravery meet prejudices and fears. To be honest with oneself about how our own intuition guides us, we must recognize that we are constantly bombarded with temptations that test our weaknesses. In those moments, the Lord guides us to be in line with the creation story from within.

The music felt in the heart and the Words expressing emotions from the mind are peaceful. This peace reverberates into the surroundings, altering the lives of those who feel self-conscious and misunderstood by giving them moments of bravery. That magnetism of personality in those who are good and faithful in following the direction given by the Lord brings light to the darkness.

Trusting the Lord creates magnetism in a person, but this magnetism is spiritual in nature. It helps the spirit re-

main strong in the heart and mind, and listen and think like a light scholar. Obviously, the truth is learned by listening, and the magnetism of another person's tongue is interpreted by the listener, based on their intuition and emotions. But true words are not always spoken, so putting trust in others comes at a price for any good and noble person. Being open to believing that spirit means taking a chance and risking vulnerability. When there is popularity in the words spoken, the crowds will bring speculation and misery. They will search for weaknesses, biases, and ill speech. But grace befalls those who eagerly try to please the Lord's Spirit.

The music of the creation story rings Truth from the heavens through the heart. And by listening carefully and aligning more with the music, by letting it grow stronger and sharing it with friends, one grows closer to a relationship with God in paradise. Through those tones resembling the trumpets and harps of angelic lore, the heavens reach closer to a person of faith.

This music also brings delightful clarity and the relief of understanding the faults of other people and how they choose to emulate the strengths found in prayer. This understanding is not gained through concentrating on a self-directed wish. It is achieved by focusing on and enjoying the music of God's paradise. In prayer, people show that they trust in themselves to listen carefully and learn, and build a relationship with God and the heavens. When we internalize what we learn through prayer, we show our obedience and love, and trust in the wisdom of the Lord. The love shown is the essence of consciousness in all the universes.

Love then begets the creation story. In that, the heavens on Earth are grounded in a natural place of existence and perceived by the person through the senses. Yet, that loving sound that comes from the heart amplifies an understanding of another sense-making intuition that brings love into our world. God surrounds us in the vibrations that manifest from the hearts of those in prayer. And in His infinite wisdom, He shares Himself with us.

Be brave in how you conduct yourself in your surroundings in life. Give God His credit for directing us forward through our trust in Him, and know that He walks with us through the valley of the shadow of death. His vision is unclear to many, but through prayer and intuition, we have the agency to better understand the heart and mind. We provide a plane for Christ to exist. Let His love belong in your life. Let Him watch over your friends and amplify their strengths to manage the challenges in the world. This life is precious, and we have mere moments to belong to the heavens and build His kingdom on Earth. In this kingdom, all on Earth understand that growing closer to Him through an evolution of reasoning brings about a higher order, rightful for His return.

This manifestation of the paradise once lost and now found has great purpose. It is the direction of the creation story told by God at the origin of the universes. Every soul can become harmonized together through this effort. And in that understanding, where the strength of all grows together, peace can be maintained. The light will shine on all who hide in the shadows. The weaknesses, biases, and self-serving behaviors that arise out of the denial of our love for

others will be revealed by this light. Love can conquer the consciousness. Division can be overcome, and people can be united. Men and women can defeat the devil.

Accepting the love of the Lord carries the burden of showcasing trust in one's faith to others. And in the moment when most people feel overwhelmed by their own personal shadows and demons is a moment of realization that faith saves us. It is in our uniqueness that we feel we can deliver something profound to the world. As we share this profound gift, we realize the depth of the worship we also share with the people in our surroundings, and they help guide our growth. Due to the powerful nature of friendship, these moments of satisfaction within the heart are extraordinary because they are the moments when we change the world together. And as we shift the vibration or essence of each person's gifts toward this outcome, we feel like life has meaning.

It can be difficult to acknowledge that we owe our greatness to others and the Lord. Many want to be recognized as the sole driving force behind their abilities. They feel that the effort spent to become someone of special recognition was a battle they fought alone. But in retrospect, they will see that attempt at separation not as independence but as isolation that created a barrier to where they could have taken their talents.

When we realize that it takes heart to reveal our gifts to the world, we recognize how purposeful others are in our lives. They help us create and develop our abilities, our talents, and ourselves. However, it is due to our competitive nature that we recognize these gifts from the heart. Initially, we are driven by our own interests. But our motivation shifts

when we recognize the amplification of heartwarming gratefulness of others. And, as our demonstration of love for one another enters the arena of competition, we admire those who gave us our greatest gifts. That is how we work and grow together in friendship.

Oh reader, I am fully aware of how miserable some are, as there are many who fail to live by the principle that love from the heart involves competition. We try to outmatch one another, often without recognizing that the love we put out into the world is the same feeling of grace the Lord provides in bestowing talents on us in the world. Our ability then to recognize, match, and exceed the love of our friends, and many others as well, is truly awesome.

Therefore, I propose that the way to demystify this secret, which has remained clandestine and cryptic to the world, is to share it wholeheartedly. Show others your gifts by delivering a loud response and being brave. Regardless of your perceptions of the world itself, show your love through the heart. Share it as faith, and share it as friendship.

God provided us with these memories of friendship throughout the world to give us pleasure. It is in jubilation that we realize that others manifest their world through their talents and match the love we have shared. By depicting this robust, cheerful, idealized life of abundance, my intent is not only to wish that you have the opportunity to love yourselves, but also to share the knowledge to help you readers, dearest to God, the Lord, and Holy Ghost, to feel comfort in that ability as well. The secret to gaining a moment's rest in friendship, reader, and memories of blessings, is at your fingertips. It is the secret to having your life's wishes fulfilled

and to living a life of pride. It is simply to allow the heart to be competitive.

Thus, we shall discuss the amplification of friendship through the heart. As we radiate a vibration of love, it is often matched with love. And as we show bravery by sharing our talents and gifts, it triggers appreciation from others in our surroundings. When we receive these compliments from those who admire us, reader, we return the love by sharing much more of our knowledge, intuition, and talent.

Reader, as you share more of yourself, the more it is welcomed by your friends, and this belief in yourself then grows through faith and becomes self-perpetuating. But remember that God provides the talent, and you work to amplify those gifts, showcasing them as an embodiment of the trustful understanding of your spirituality. By staying true to God and sharing those gifts that are derived through His endowment, your friends and others in your surroundings will recognize a model to follow.

And in those moments when you are sharing your love with the world, you are experiencing vulnerability. You are under greater pressure to perform this act of love from the witnesses who may try to emulate your acts of bravery. Being a role model then is often paired with the possibility of failure as well as the air of nobility. These gifts from God serve as a reminder of your humanness. And a reminder that God is the spiritual Father who supports all things, everywhere, through an invisible heart and hand. In fact, His guidance is paramount, and even more influential than any friendship between people in the world. It is quite profound to think that all thanks go to the Lord for our own abilities and tal-

ents. And that fame and glory, within our spiritual understanding, become amplified through the work of others.

By working to understand ourselves and showing our bravery through being competitive with our hearts and our love, we forge a history of wellbeing, not only for ourselves but for others. The Lord shows His appreciation through loving amplification of our abilities and presents us throughout history as strong. This spiritual connection expands and strengthens our mental abilities as well. The heart begets the abilities and talents, but the mind then generates decisions. And when we become aligned in spirit, our perception of the world is harmonious with others.

Patterns of thought and behavior are recognized in others. We pick up on these patterns where others may sound or act in similar ways to their family, friends, or role models. And we can recognize the authenticity of their love for themselves as well because, in connecting with the spirit, the suggestion by their mind to be authentic to themselves is reinforced simply by belonging with you and watching you be brave. This releases others from the burden to be right and allows them to enjoy themselves.

The shield that we carry around and hide behind in life is a construction built of our fear of being used or exploited. And that protection is visible in others as they replicate it in similar battles.

The patterns of the heart reflect our strengths and talents. Amplifying those talents through love is growth. And recognizing the patterns that you have outgrown, and being aware of other people's abilities, is great. Even after amplifying your bravery, you will find that there are still lessons to

learn about growing in your lifetime through spiritual wisdom. These lessons, however flexible, will produce reactions from other people in your surroundings. And other people will reveal their judgment by trying to impose their opinions.

Therefore, stay mindful of the patterns of people, and be aware of their judgments. But then carefully question the guidance they offer and how it impacts your identity, looking at it with a competitive heart. Whether you share the conclusion you reach through your own understanding and judgment or you keep it to yourself, your response to others can impact the world at large, including the people in your immediate surroundings.

In any case, people share wisdom and cast judgment while they attempt to understand the reasoning of other people. And the love you cast toward other people may be perceived differently by each of them, thus it may elicit differing opinions and be returned in different forms. These opinions are based on the interpretation of facts and the history experienced by the other person. Therefore, the love that breaks down walls between you and the surrounding world may be interpreted differently by another person, like two seemingly unrelated events. There will be people who return your love and support you as well. Therefore, it is important to consider the reaction that may arise in response to someone showcasing their talents.

Oh reader, the world is an unpredictable and difficult place to live because of the complicated interplay of patterns, memories, and histories. Not everyone wants the best for you. Not everyone wants to see other people succeed. But

they cannot impose their limiting beliefs upon you, no matter how clever their arguments may be. They are to be cast away, without hesitation, from your loving embrace and your life.

Do not harbor amusement such as others do when they see you fail. They are often jealous or envious. And deeply flawed people who are jealous and envious will take the lowest road to present their judgment of you. They hate and despise being wrong when they see your growth. This instrument of fear that they do not understand does irreparable harm as their judgment and jealousy is cast away and it is absorbed by you, reader. Therefore, shine your light like your judgment matters most. Shine your light to show that you understand the patterns around you. Because your light will cast knowledge on their shadows. That revelation of truth to the surroundings then is growth in relationships with the surrounding people.

The world is a fearful place. It is full of those who do not have the love to contribute to society. And in those patterns of limiting beliefs, judgment is often mistaken for wisdom. Their jealousy and envy are just two forms of hatred. Those people reconcile the views within their limited knowledge and curse you as they watch you shine. Therefore, be brave enough to share your talents and love. And stay authentic to yourself. Know your talents and love. And learn the patterns around you well enough to ensure that you have a sound and mindful perspective of the world. This bravery is the next hurdle of growth.

Patterns reveal our emotions as well. They are jealous and envious and fearful, but they are also curious, and they

amuse themselves by showcasing their own flaws. But those who are not led by the heart will be led by fear, and they will not try to understand your value. Therefore, their thought and behavior patterns will reflect their arrogance.

Reader, there will be moments when you feel like showing your opinions and your perspective to the world. On the other hand, with a competitive heart and sound mind, you might reflect the perspectives of those in your surroundings back to them instead. This works like a mirror, allowing them to see and understand their own faults.

This also allows you to identify the intent the other person has for your conversation and to mirror it back in a way that does not make you feel uncomfortable. Repeating back their thoughts and actions as if through a mirror will help them understand how you have seen their words and behaviors. If they are more interested in your responses conveyed back to them this way, then they might understand the light you share as well.

The patterns of people who are supportive and unsupportive can thus be dealt with through different responses from you, reader. The love you amplify in the world will either be accepted or rejected. By further amplifying the growth with others in friendship, you will develop your talents. And by mirroring the judgment back to those who have rejected you, you will provide space to clarify your dismissal of their intent. Dealing with the jealousy and envy of others any other way will cost too much of your time to solve their problems for them. Just mirror back what you perceive and move on with your friendships.

Judgment itself requires the perception of facts. And behind those facts is the complicated history of each person relating them. How you interpret that history, which has been filtered through another person's perspective, depends on your ability to be compassionate. It connects the heart and mind. Therefore, it is important to be mindful when reflecting what you see from other people in the world.

Our perceptions of facts over time become patterns. We deal with events in our lives, and we learn. This is a process of growth, and we need to understand why we conduct ourselves in certain ways. This often requires new knowledge, which we gain through either a spiritual process or self-reflection of our own world. This is why we share our love or a perceptual mirror back to the world.

Our mind and judgment then protect us from the fear, jealousy, envy, and other negative attributes of other people. Careful negotiation in how we conduct ourselves in the world is necessary to resist the temptation to hurt others who have cursed us. However, your own growth and love are paramount to your understanding of how you hurt others. The need for this personal love far exceeds the pain endured for personal growth.

Oh reader, you gain understanding from being vulnerable to the love of others and as a mirror of judgment. Do not take on the pain that other people have brought upon themselves because they have limited their own beliefs. Show them their limiting beliefs in a way that is comfortable for you, through a mirror. And move past their misunderstanding. You have strengths to rely on. Your spirit will help you maintain your resolve. You get to hold your head up high

where order begins to make sense in a chaotic world. But be brave, the braver the better in this world, as you understand the patterns relating to people and learn when to show your heart or psychological mirror.

This is a far cry from perfection. The issues involved in deciding whether and how to advance in friendship or protection with each person are seldom easily understood. However, one issue that can be constant is the connection you feel in your friendships. These people offer you advice and peace in times of torment. So, let the comfort of understanding from your heart be a bridge with them, because what they say and do matters to you. Whatever their vibration or essence is, hold onto those feelings and grant the person your attentiveness in your conversations with them.

Bridge the divide, and offer people comfort or confidence. Their talents and bravery should be awakened through your call to prayer. In this way, you have an ongoing opportunity to offer your sympathy. But remember that not all advancement is positive and linear. Not all mirrored actions are negative. Sometimes life is a riddle, unsolvable to us in the moment. It is only when we look back at what stood out to us during our lives that we can piece together parts of the mysteries and look for patterns. These patterns are our own, and they are also from other people who have affected us.

Life is mysterious in many ways. It provides us opportunities to love and showcase our skillsets, and yet, paradoxically, it breeds jealousy and envy. And we constantly analyze the situation and people around us to try to understand them and to inform our decisions. Gaining understanding

through growing pains and pleasures is what constitutes life. If you have not been paying attention to the patterns around you and how they affect you, start doing so now.

Learn about these patterns by shedding light on them through self-reflection. And shed light on the surrounding patterns through sound judgment. The heart leads in any effort to give life a spark, which explains why the heart does exactly what it should do for our safety. This also sheds some light on the role that intuition plays in our ability to stay competitive. The world at large is full of slumber and inconsistencies. And yet, we analyze the situation and rely on our talents and intuition to bolster our bravery in each moment. But we do this to try to learn and grow faster than other people. However, we must strive to listen during memorable moments and stick to solving our own lives. The growth in that allows us to unburden ourselves of lost time. Karma can be evil or good, and to learn how history can be altered and strive to replace shadow with light in life is to infuse God into the surroundings.

Life offers tremendous opportunities if you are willing to step outside the status quo and follow the heart's advice, paired with exercising sound judgment. If our spirit lives in Heaven's eternity and overlaps within our heart's conscious voice, do you think it would advise us to simply stay in a pattern to match other people? Definitely not. If you had the strength of spirit to match your greatest truths and solve the bedeviled world, would you care to try? Of course. The blocks would unravel, and the answers would unfurl, revealing the knowledge to provide a clearer perspective of your life.

However, your friends and family are what matter for keeping your wits about you within this world and understanding such patterns. You cannot fully understand yourself through self-reflection alone. And you cannot understand love if you are all alone. You can master a part of the puzzle, but you can never be alone and understand life.

Therefore, enjoy life with a strong heart and mind. And battle through your mistakes and rejections, to create an attitude that fits that unwavering spirit from Heaven.

The present moment is just one piece of the puzzle. And in the present, you can try to change each fiber of your body to help others understand you, including the Holy Spirit. That music that you hear playing from the heart, it is a rhythm that plays to all in the surroundings. It is the knowledge that love conquers all, and an attitude that the mind defends. And yet, you also need to try to understand other people in the world – how they move, what they say, what they don't say, and how their impulses become their reality. When you start to understand this, then are you preparing yourself for an education. This is life. Education is mandatory.

The heavens wait forever for you to understand that love conquers all. The talents you are gifted and your understanding of the surrounding world are only a fragment of consciousness. The music plays below the consciousness. It plays in a rhythm that underscores everything in life. Being in tune with the heart will help you understand when you are to use a psychological mirror. It will help you understand all the inconsistencies in the messages you receive. It will help you know what is true and what is still largely unearthed as a

mystery. Let the light of truth unsettle this earth. Let yourself believe in your spirit to guide you forward. Get to know the people around you and speak from the heart.

Oh reader, there is a moment yet to be solved. That is the meeting with us in Heaven. Those memories and talents, the friends and acquaintances, all flourish in solving what mirror life had become. By showing your bravery through the heart in life, the amplification of spirit entered the world. And through a mirror of perceptions which you recognized as evil patterns, you shined your light in a defensive position.

This light, as spirit, is guidance to solving the mirror that had been the devil's torture. You will understand that, in life, you cannot have the Holy Father and the devil as two masters at the same time. And in serving the Holy Father, God the Almighty, the mirror of torture is erased from your life.

It makes sense then that the riddle that keeps the serpent asleep is the same riddle that woke you. That the pieces of your memory become realized as your authentic self through a brave heart and sound judgment. The unification with other people's spirits through prayer only makes you stronger, as you grow to understand the true living purpose of your talents. That is, to benefit others in understanding God.

In this world, a villain is within you. Bringing that shadow of yourself to light, and understanding its weaknesses through your bravery, is your greatest secret. Though unlocking that secret is meaningless without first unifying the mind to be able to interact in the world and realize friendships.

Reader, take the time to select a purpose for yourself and a narrative that reflects that purpose. Take the time to understand how your talents fit that purpose of spirit. And take

the time to educate others on how you came to understand your purpose by living a faithful life that shines light for all through God. This will bring strength and growth in life. And it will amplify your spirit in the heart and mind, and in Heaven.

Part Two

As the heart sings its songs of jubilation, the mind works at its craft with just as much passion. And a steadfast authority within offers a tone of certainty that rings true for each individual. However, sometimes that certainty forecasts problems that can only be resolved after clarification is received. Some people see problems clearly and identify how to solve them with ingenuity and thought-provoking methods. The manifestation of will in these people is greater than their want.

The mind itself is a tool we use to understand wants and fears. The wants are an expression of desires based on a perception of the bigger picture and anticipation of the outcomes of different strategies. These strategies may be wholesome, but be aware that they might be unwholesome, because the mind is capable of understanding the evil in the world. If there is a goodness of spirit in the person, then the strategies will be weighed by the heart as well. The mind habitually uses a fear reaction to protect us from other people, birds, and beasts in our surroundings. In those moments when we sense that we are in a weakened position, the mind understands how we can overcome such problems, and it formulates plans to manifest desires and foster longevity of outcomes.

The mind itself helps give this universe substance and dimension, as one plane to live, with solid objects and countless other things we perceive through the senses. We see through the present moment the world surrounding us. We

make our way through such moments and feel the repercussions only later, through introspection. The mind, therefore, adapts and uses the subconscious to build layers of psychic thought onto the present conscious reality. Even after digging deeper into those phenomena that built our present moment, it is still very difficult to understand how to self-correct.

Often, the challenges we faced in our history are repeated, unless the strategies devised in our minds change dramatically. A history spanning generations has been built into our genetics, directing our thoughts and behaviors to follow certain patterns. This physically stored memory is then a bondage of sorts, as the present moment is necessarily built upon the past.

This history embedded in us shapes and supports our gifts and talents as well. We understand the world through a framework that was instilled in us at birth. The psychic energy of our subconscious plays a significant part in how the events in life factor into how we understand ourselves through genetic records. For example, when many within a single line of family history share talent in a certain area, there is a good chance that a new child from the family would have such talents as well.

All at once, the mind keeps us in the present, looks to manifest our desires and protect us in the future, and builds upon the past. This remarkable feat encompasses a subconscious understanding, and it incorporates the building blocks of history. History evolves, and we progress in our talents with effort and a finer understanding.

Therefore, much of the work we put into the world to adapt and develop our talents demonstrates our competitive nature. We strive to be competitive in the world to showcase our knowledge, and in the hopes of finding familiarity and friendships. In the right situations, we can demonstrate such mindfulness and talents to others and gain respect from those in our surroundings. Achieving this takes bravery, as it requires understanding that we risk a certain level of vulnerability for the possibility of receiving a reward from those in our surroundings. But in taking that risk, we can begin to trust our strengths, our talents, and our ability to navigate the situation.

That moment when we begin to trust in ourselves represents a deep level of commitment. This understanding is deeply ingrained in the subconscious, and it affects the psychic phenomenon of living a lifestyle that invites fortune, which one gains from developing and applying their talents. The fortune is often proportionate to the challenge that must be overcome by the mind to achieve its objective. In this regard, the tone is set for how each person will build their lifestyle using the psychic phenomenon underlying their own wit and understanding.

Each person drives their own talents and understanding, which rely on the subconscious forces within us and the people around us. Those subconscious forces have many layers as well, and the mind is often blind to these until something makes it aware of them. The mind's journey through life is spent formulating strategies and working on solving puzzles, largely on the conscious level. However, that ability is driven by the subconscious, and our solutions and strategy de-

signs are determined as part of the process in pursuit of an end desire. Sometimes the subconscious drives us to question why the problem exists at all and whether resolving it is even necessary. Sometimes the conscious mind becomes hyper-focused on a particular matter and needs redirection in life. Therefore, it is important for the mind to maintain flexibility.

Flexibility of the mind is also important for its work relating to the three distinct aspects of time – the past, present, and future – and for its ability to drive a person's talents so that they can trust the direction their life is heading and their orientation on that path. Flexibility is absolutely necessary for the mind to process the shift of information from the unconscious to the subconscious while the person learns from intuition.

Intuition is where the mind meets the heart. Intuition often overrides the mind when a voice of reason recognizes the need to review the processes occurring and takes command of the situation. The intuition is a psychic muscle that grows in strength the more it is used. This conscious reasoning is often associated with the reactions that other individuals, beasts, and birds have to us. Since we are not driven solely by our own fears and desires, but we communicate with others and are moved by these communications, the intuitive voice of reason chooses words to fit the particular social situation.

No matter how complex the situation gets, or even if things remain relatively simple, there will always be distractions along the way to entice us to move in ways that are not in our best interest. Therefore, trusting the voice of reason

is following inspired thought that will lead us to a greater lifestyle with the people we most enjoy.

The way we choose our lifestyle then is centered on the present moment, determined by our talents and strengths. We are granted enough flexibility to shape and enjoy life through willpower and intuition.

The mind is heavily dependent upon the limbic system in the brain, which forms part of the central nervous system. This is important because the limbic system is the seat where emotions are regulated in the mind. If someone feels rushed or stressed, this impulse drives the brain to become hypervigilant. And the body, therefore, prepares to tackle oncoming challenges.

A state of arousal is a tactic the body uses to overcome challenges, but it is also used in sense-making processes when pleasure and pain are anticipated. The anticipation often occurs below the conscious mind, and the brain is hardwired to respond to stimuli occurring throughout the central nervous system. For example, the mind can run on the stress hormones pumped into the body in response to an intense situation, spurring us to fight or flee. As we embrace the challenges in our lives, we often use the same fight or flight instincts when we sense that another similar event is about to happen.

All of this can help us understand how the interactions between the mind and body affect how the patterns of our memories subconsciously drive our behavior. We often feel the need to address certain challenges in preparation for handling similar instances later. However, in those moments of anticipation, we can maintain a calm demeanor by being

brave and having faith in ourselves, assuring ourselves that we know how to tackle the moment.

This agility to learn and adapt to each situation is fostered through experience. It is so often the case that after we experience a challenge, and overcome it, the same resistance becomes less intimidating when it occurs again later. Therefore, our responses to the challenges in life need to be regulated by a logical approach.

Using logic involves understanding when in the process to take charge and when to ask for assistance. And engaging in this battle between personal agency and external influence utilizes a whole range of social skills. It requires the ability to see the big picture and use the smaller components to form a strategy. By managing our emotions and keeping in mind that not all decisions need to be made in a rush, we can pause and master the situation by asking follow-up questions. These questions allow us to gain a decisive tactical advantage, in that we feel confident in our first logical assessment about who should be making the ultimate decision and who should be providing support for the decision.

Now, following a bit of tactical wisdom, you should know who you are applying that logic to in any given situation. Using that bit of charm and wisdom sharpens your perspective, bringing into focus what you believe should occur during the challenging moments. And when you share the rational explanation for your assessment, the person you share it with reaches a tipping point in their understanding. Their perspective on the challenge tips one way or the other, either in agreement or in disagreement with your views. It takes time to understand their reactions. And over time, as

your understanding of the relationship grows deeper, it can help you determine how you use your charm and wisdom to tip their viewpoint in your favor.

Therefore, understanding how to formulate a strategy based on the responses to your follow-up questions is paramount to using your charm and wisdom effectively. During the initial moments of a challenge, when your stress response is heightened, the body may hijack the mind and override your thoughts. But these notions will merely be passing thoughts if you maintain your composure and remember how to influence the behaviors of other people.

You are largely responsible for choosing the battles you engage in. And when you make these choices, you can adopt a willingness to understand the actors in the situation. By reflecting on whether you need to take action or include other people, you can make logical assessments that will determine the outcome.

Using your own power and social credit to impose your influence on the world around you results in an outcome that is fast and bold. Your confident actions get others to agree and act quickly as you carry out this maneuver. Essentially, you bring about your preferred outcome of particular events by putting stress on others.

An outcome that involves influencing others and gaining their assistance becomes a bit more complex, in that you must allow others to take part in determining an agreed-upon outcome. This posture of problem solving helps resolve some long-standing arguments. Keep in mind that giving people an opportunity to voice their opinions does not always result in a fast and effective outcome; however, it does

change the level of your personal accountability. This typically involves utilizing social credit within a network of trusted individuals.

Determining the logic and your rationale for how to approach your positioning and then motivating people to continue to put forth these efforts takes leadership skills. Maintaining the motivation to contribute and complete the challenge is the responsibility of the entire team. However, taking a decisive stance and having people believe in you is an enviable position.

These people who follow you see you as courageous as you take the leadership role in the challenge. Working to understand your battles and where you want to head in your life is your pursuit for greatness. Thus, tackling the tall orders and stepping up to face the challenges in life is a healthier response than passively waiting or running and hiding from stress.

Gaining an understanding of the challenges in a lifetime is no easy feat, and people who accomplish this should be proud. When you reach that moment of understanding, you can apply what you've learned so that you can adapt quickly to the constant challenges in life. This is a warrior spirit, and it creates a bond between team members, family members, and people in the community who admire those who are willing to pursue their own greatness. So, when you are presented with a challenge, think of the logic of action and agency, remember your rationale, and then strategize how to motivate a team. All of these components contribute to the amount of power you will wield in social circles in the future.

Oh reader, this may sound daunting, and success is not guaranteed, but do not be afraid to fail. Learning new things requires you to accept a certain amount of risk, as taking on a challenge means taking a chance on yourself and opening yourself up to vulnerability. However, whether you succeed or fail is often not as important as whether you enjoy the progress you make over time. So lead with courage and give yourself the chance to be great. And know that the moments of vulnerability that you endure will help you improve your leadership abilities.

Now, focusing only on your own end goals will not help you to motivate others. And the motivation of others should be considered as you lead them. If the other people are interested in the challenging matter at hand, they will be motivated to help. If someone has zero interest in your objective or your cause, you can never force them to appreciate your position or support you with the same enthusiasm as someone who is motivated to help you. In fact, just hearing you talk about the things you are passionate about may annoy someone or push them away if they don't care about what fascinates or drives you.

The important thing to do if you want to encourage people to contribute and take part in the challenge is to pay attention to people's responses. When you feel the vibration of someone else's emotions, and you listen to what they say about the challenge, you will gain insight into what their perspective is. This perspective is the tool you will need to help you understand what will motivate them to see the value in your leadership and to assist in the task, even if they don't care deeply about your position. You must make it

about their position. And to do this, first, you reflect their emotions back to them. To figure out the emotional level of their interest in the challenge, begin by asking them open-ended questions. These are questions that call for a detailed answer rather than a yes or no response.

Based on their responses, you will learn whether and how the person can be motivated. By recognizing their position and listening to their perspective, you will lower the risk of being honest with you, thus lowering the person's vulnerability. Try to mirror their body language, with a bit of subtlety. And nod from time to time to show agreement and to gain greater acceptance within their perspective. You do not need to disclose your perspective unless the other person asks for your perspective. The way to understand what is important to them is to listen carefully and then paraphrase or summarize their main points to ensure and show that you are on the same page before asking further goal-defining questions.

Eventually, there will be a moment when you feel a pause or a nudge, indicating that the conversation might be moving back toward your perspective. At this point, if the other person has answered your questions honestly, you will have heard enough from them to determine what they are feeling emotionally and how they are applying their logic.

You can then determine which points you agree on, and use them to continue building a rapport while you suggest the reasons supporting your perspective on the challenge and explain how you will contribute and lead. Applying your leadership skills, you can help them understand the common

goals of the challenge and find their motivation to contribute.

When they ask further questions, there is no need to provide any details that you feel uncomfortable disclosing. In fact, it is rather intoxicating to lead with purpose and without needing permission. Being confident in your wisdom, compassion, and values actually makes you more trustworthy than being wholly flexible to people's needs.

It may take a few rounds of questions and answers, even after you have stated the reasons supporting your perspective and you've described how you will lead the challenging issue, for the other person to show motivation in alignment with the common goals. Meanwhile, you can continually assess their emotions, mirror their perspective, and ask more detailed questions for clarification. This may take time because the minds need to sync up to gain a shared understanding of what both parties will receive from taking part in addressing the challenging issue.

As you take steps to motivate the other person to contribute to your task, you can also ask them questions to learn about their strengths. Through these questions, you can find out what their talents and skills are. In other words, you can figure out what they would be great at accomplishing and how you envision their efforts paying off.

Motivation is primarily based on trust and grounded in fairness. Therefore, as a leader, you must strive to be fair in terms of what you ask of each person and what they will receive in return for their contributions.

Taking the reins of leadership involves seeing the entire big picture and putting forth a lot of effort. Even just pro-

viding insight and instructions on how to handle the challenge requires strategy and effort. As a leader, you must have an understanding of how long tasks will take and how resources will be obtained and used to enable people to accomplish their tasks.

Resource management is an important aspect that should not be overlooked when assessing or processing a challenge. Remember not to promise more than you can gather. All resources, including time, are finite, so be fair with your team. These relationships are built on trust and fairness.

Having trust in your own abilities will help you be brave. But bravery means facing the possibility of failure, not running from or turning a blind eye to a challenge just to avoid failure. Thus, you should not shy away from asking yourself what could happen if you take on a challenge and accept leadership responsibility but cannot ultimately accomplish your goals. In that case, where you gave your honest effort, it is likely that you did succeed to some degree, so there are wins to celebrate. And since experience is paramount to gaining confidence, you will have more confidence to continue to help the people in your surroundings to hear and understand your logic, rationale, and motivation. This experience is never lost, and the lessons you learned from the challenge are often a good topic of conversation. It is most certainly better to discuss the efforts you took on and the lessons gleaned than to sit back and avoid taking the initial risk.

Being brave then becomes a game where you learn about yourself by navigating social dynamics. And as you advance

in the game, and you gain a deeper understanding of relationships and teamwork, you build social capital for yourself. Enduring the difficulties of a challenge often pays off more than initially anticipated, as the effective use of time and other resources tends to produce unexpected outcomes in addition to the original end goals.

Oh reader, take a chance and lead without fear in pursuit of something you care deeply about. The talents and education you gain will be useful when you least expect it. And when you find opportunities to build relationships with the people in your surroundings as you help them enrich their own lives, you will find that you have the momentum to strategize more effectively, based on a clearer perception and an ever growing understanding of the world. Not only will you have a better understanding of your rationale, but you will also know that other people share an interest in the same goals you have.

There is a movement of all life around us in our surroundings. The primal energy that directs all unconscious behavior is thus evident in a great tapestry of life and death. And despite that movement, through which living things share resources and exaggerate their own livelihoods, the surroundings are fiercely stable. As opportunities exist then, threats are perceived in the surroundings. And, given one's strengths and weaknesses, their strategies often coincide with how adept they are at fostering fortune from their efforts. Therefore, the effort involved in being competitive in the search for and enhancement of those talents of psychic understanding is greatly beneficial to the mindful person.

The impartiality of nature then becomes abundantly clear, due to the fairness of opportunities going to those who are brave and willful, regardless of their background or history. Every person, beast, and bird becomes one in a tapestry of life, but they each have different outcomes due to their own awareness of the patterns of psychic energy around them. Picking up on this energy involves an emotional understanding of the body, heart, and mind, together. The limbic system understands these emotions and translates them into a language that can convey where opportunities exist. In a deeper sense, the limbic system understands the music underlying the movement of people, beasts, and birds, which sets the tone in the mind and shapes our perspective on each moment.

In the moments during a challenge, each person engages in a form of self-protection, deriving safety from the strategic communication of their logic to others. And where the opportunities exist and the potential rewards favor everyone involved, there will be motivation from all that can drive the fulfillment of a strategy. Therefore, communication from the leader is the protective behavior of one who is not only logical but also honest with themselves.

Taking on a challenge in life and creating a superior pattern means being both guarded at times and vulnerable at times. Being brave and agile in chaotic times. In the moments of chaos, a leader relies on strengths and opportunities, while seeing threats and weaknesses as a new chance to develop innovative patterns of thought and behavior.

By adhering to the mindfulness of the moment, those who contribute to overcoming a challenge can develop their

skillsets. Maintaining this awareness is good and wholesome as long as there is transparency and commitment to accountability to the team.

And in these moments when all things work in rhythm to get to the point where change meets fate, the leaders achieve immortality in their legacy through storytelling. This highly effective method of communication helps to motivate the members of the team. The paradigm can shift from reflective motivation to expressions of praise and examples of fortune.

The stories told are based on experiences, although they may be infused with a lesson of morality or ethical values being taught. They might even be used to reinforce the rules within the team. And sometimes they are simply meant to entertain, as this allows the team members to bond over the shared stories. These communications are designed to help strengthen the spirit of the teammates.

And in all the chaos of the shifting energy and the revelation of psychic understanding, there is an ongoing ingenuity of more and better leaders being created to lead in the future. The legacies of those who lead now are the stories they tell, which will be told again to train the next line of leaders. And as those stories are told, the strength of the group is perpetuated. However, the strength of the leader will shine only as bright as their light is reflected in the stories.

Therefore, each leader must find purpose and endeavor to challenge the team to grow together. Every team member can contribute consistently and learn how to become leaders themselves. This round of emotions felt and stories told then

form the basis of a prayer circle. This prayer circle is one in which all in the group can voice their perspectives.

There is a lot of coordination of competition involved in the formulation of a strategy within the group. Prayer circles allow for reconciliation of notions and thoughtful consideration about how things could be better in the future by the people in the group. And in those spaces, where people can be vulnerable enough to be completely honest with themselves and others, the bonds of the team grow.

Oh reader, there is so much to anticipate, given how the minds meld together in a prayer circle. It is not only from the heart that the atmosphere changes and the energy shifts to a new vibration. The mind also continues to advance based on the shift in primal energy or a new consciousness. Thus, the development of friendships and alliances produces new ways of thinking.

But remember that the mind is aware of evil. And these new paths of thinking beget new experiences for the group. However, in the moments of growth, the power of trust overcomes the evil temptations in the world.

Reader, there is a time and place for storytelling, as this will encourage moments of reflective motivation. These are the moments when logic, rationale, and team motivation take root. Then, there is a shared understanding among the teammates that, in the surroundings, there is an agreement on how to proceed in terms of strategy. And in their midst, there is a leader brave enough to search out new patterns or approaches. The understanding they all share is shaped by their reflection on the steps they've taken toward this per-

spective, the stories told, and their motivations, as they all gain spirit together.

Reader, there will be a moment when the heart meets the mind. And when that occurs, you will understand how these two centers of polarity vibrate differently. The heart gleams with enthusiasm and confidence. It enjoys the company of others and revels in the loving embraces throughout its lifetimes. The mind, by contrast, assesses and analyzes the situations and patterns in the surroundings. Then, through patterned understanding, a hierarchy of leadership is built by those who are fair and logical and charismatic.

This polarity of the heart and mind is the source of the constant internal tension in all life. And these tensions are the sources of our greatest stories. And through those stories, we grow together in kinship.

Reader, people in a leadership position face moments of vulnerability because they must trust and rely on those they lead, as the people who follow are entrusted with certain responsibilities. Leadership is a conscious effort that utilizes any and all available tools that might be suitable for the situation. But following and leading both require a leap of faith. So trust yourself, be confident in your talents, and follow the light of the Lord as you tackle the challenges in life and encourage others to grow with you in spirit.

Angelic Wisdom

Part One

“Author, there is a way to gain knowledge through the angelic beings. Sing their praise. Sing to everyone who passes you by. That all who know you will understand their own divinity. That acceptance of the love they feel for themselves, and their natural state of grace, signals their emergence as divine beings. Real love resounds through this prayer. Share this love with the spirits within others to feed their truest nature. Your ability to do this comes from feeling and being loved yourself,” said the Archangel Gabriel.

“The imperceptible elements that foster being loved collect and mount up in a shared tunnel of light. The truest nature of the universes is between the heavens, and reality is an elaborate system of these light corridors. You have made these tunnels before, in prayer. Understand, Author, that the spirits of others in Heaven reach out to those with imploring hearts to answer their prayers.

“There is a moment where all who live feel the power of their own spirituality, those who lived before and those who will come after. This is a moment where they befriend the great Lord Christ in the world. If you are a friend to many and you go to the Lord to ask for his grace, those established tunnels from your own network are available, as are the networks of others in subsequent degrees. The people who are truly connected in life are already loved and feel the light and laughter of jubilation from their network of prayer circles. However, it is for the secluded and standoffish people who do not love themselves that this story is crafted.

“The people who have limiting beliefs are often drifting through life in a moral slumber. Asking for prayers to help network these people in calls for an answer with a unified creation story that includes the King, Jesus Christ, as part of our earthly lives. These circles welcome those who are healing from the fears of their past memories. Dwelling on those past events is how people limit themselves and give up on hope. The outcomes seem so inevitable to them that they shrink away and hide from the light of the prayer circles. And if the people who are already networked into the circles cannot help, sometimes the angels themselves bring wisdom to those who sleep to wake them.”

The Archangel Gabriel continued, “Those with the power of love, light, and laughter are more than willing to elevate the mood of such downcast spirits. But these people, however, need to challenge their own limiting beliefs and rejoin the conversation with the King, Lord, and Savior, Jesus Christ.

“Author, the ones who are willing to love feel that it’s easy to cheer the downcast. Happily, they take on the emotional toll to feel like they’ve helped in a situation where they feel compassion or empathy. However, the nature of this battle is deeply misunderstood. So, in this story, we will explain how you can help those with downcast spirits who have spiritual blockages, as the angelic forces do. Helping those in need or who live without hope can take an emotional toll. But we will explain how you can help without being weighed down by the emotional burden.”

Archangel Gabriel began, “If you were asleep morally, that challenging spot would be a difficult place to connect with spiritually. Instead of constructing a tunnel of love and

light directly to that spot, it is far easier from the angelic perspective to bring outside helpers into the picture. This means that when talking with the downcast who have become emotionally numb, you may ask about their interactions with other people. Notice when they turn away from the conversation to try to hide their suffering. This reaction can be fiery or solemn. However, they will avoid the truth and turn down what is being offered to them. They should not be pressured to confront what they are afraid of.

“If they feel pressured, those emotions they were bottling up within themselves will rise to the surface and pour out for all to see. And the wall they’ve built to block spiritual connections is then reinforced, bringing a dark cloud over multiple outcomes. Instead, the help recruited from outside by angels to nourish the soul arrives in the past. The angels befriend the person where they are by nourishing a brighter outcome. Reinforcement of that light might only slightly change the outcome of their feelings from the past. However, the opposite reaction often reveals how intense their limiting beliefs are. If hope can be instilled at a very low level, then greater detail must go into creating that healing in their life.”

The Archangel then offered me a map of magnetic frequencies shifting from inward to outward, outward to inward, and back and forth. The pulses were wavelengths, and those overlapping circles moved inward or outward in a motion that looked like breathing life. “Author, this map lays out a personality program. The wavelengths are like thought patterns for some of these circles. They feel the emotions of the body and react to the central nervous system and heart.

Those are other circles on the map. Now, if you see the mental wavelengths on this map, you will notice that their movement is slow. That is because the mind makes things real in the world, and it takes a lot of energy to change things through the mental sensemaking process. The spiritual person uses knowledge from this memory to decide how to challenge a spiritual block or habitual pattern.

“When there is hope that the pattern can be challenged, the movement of the wavelengths is a bit smoother and a bit faster. This vibration can react with the rest of the system at large. And it perceives the input from the world through the senses with greater speed. The habitual patterns that block out the past occur as if in dormancy, so the reaction to the processing of information is slow. It can be called a feeling of denial, but it is really more like sleep because that implies a subconscious process.

“When those patterns interfere with other parts of the body, the eventuality is harm or illness. Fear or anger can manifest as awful damage in the body because the information in those patterns reacts, causing impairment to an otherwise healthy system. Not all physical impairment comes from spiritual blocks and habitual patterns, but some impairment is of that nature.”

Archangel Gabriel pointed out the mental impairment of a spiritual block on the map. He said, “Author, there is something here I would like to show you. The voice speaking against you, your inner critic, is currently focused on this area of your mind. This explains why you are not lovable. If you were asked about it, that inner voice damning you to being dishonest with the world would hold you in this pat-

tern. The thoughts are connected with your body, and as you shy away from the topic, you repeat the criticism to yourself within the body to impede nourishment or information. A similar reaction occurs when a living organism does not receive enough light from its surroundings. In these moments, the being is held back from living within the system, and all processes of the cells are slowed, even regression.”

Archangel Gabriel stood by and watched me as he exclaimed, “There is hope though, Author! As we explore these mental patterns and help you align your spirit with your nervous system, heart, and mind, you will notice modest improvement in your emotions and actions.”

I looked at the map one last time before it was put away. The living, pulsating body on the map was a reflection of my life in the universe. It was a place where breath interacted with the surroundings. And I inhaled that life-giving oxygen to keep my hope alive that I was indeed lovable.

Of course the connection with the Archangel Gabriel occurred through the tunnels of love, light, and laughter. In my heart, I felt the emotional vibration lift my system in jubilation. However, due to my ignorance, his angelic voice was still beyond the reach of my knowledge. The inner critic that led my cowardice was as powerful and incredibly devastating as I allowed it to be. An awareness was growing, though, as I realized that the angel must have used a tunnel from heaven, because he spoke to me through my heart. I was astounded, as I realized he did this through an act of love, and being unlovable became a feeling that was foreign to me. He gave me hope that I could understand what was blocking me. I also thought it might be possible to under-

stand the angelic practices used to remedy the spiritual denial within downcast people.

Archangel Gabriel said, “If you can look past why you feel unlovable, then you will understand that loving other people is the change you must focus on in yourself.”

He looked down from the heavens, showing his love, laughter, and light toward me, within my heart. I say within my heart and toward me from the heavens because he offers his grace and power as a source of unlimited spirit. The angelic being, existing in spiritual and physical form at once, is of a different nature than other sentient beings. The Archangel Gabriel knows and understands God. And in his power to offer to God the throne of Earth once more, he holds a piece of understanding of the serpent’s fall. In that awareness, the light and love are found.

“Author, the love you show others, even mere acquaintances, is something I encourage. Holding this love for yourself will allow for personal growth and better alignment with your surroundings. Therefore, by maintaining love for others, even if it is intimidating to do so, you can deepen the awareness you have about loving yourself. This is how I plan to help God replace the serpent as a king on Earth. I plan on using every imaginable source of love and light to introduce the Holy Spirit into each heart so that it might enter and pass through without resistance. Everyone is tempted to make life about themselves, and this is the tendency you must address. Your understanding will then become a piece of the glorious tapestry that will introduce the King and Savior to people in your network once again. Let me explain this, Author.”

I sensed the Archangel Gabriel, in angelic form, in my heart and in my awareness. He sat in the surroundings and waited for me to love him. But that love that we humans describe as something of a gravitational force that unites the spirit with the actions of others is nonsensical to the angels. The Archangel Gabriel was teaching me about the real glue that unites all people, places, and things together.

And in the form of an angelic being of light, he announced that the warmth of the spiritual light allows the darkness and coldness to be housed in a different mindset. That mindset that he understood, and that I knew but did not understand, was detrimental to me. That block that I had was not understanding the truest form of love. That love, in itself, was awareness that allowed people to bring each other to the heavens.

“The bond that harmonizes all living spirits as a unified whole embodies all that is good and wholesome. The other form of love that was mentioned earlier, although it acts as a gravitational pull to match and unite people, is not as bright or as warm as this heavenly love.” Archangel Gabriel announced that love was inspired, and that tunnelling to see the Father in Heaven to ask that He bestow His grace on another and raise their spirits was therefore an act of divinity.

“Author, you are not a savior. And yet you stay curious. Curious about all the spiritual ancestry that came before you. They were as devoted to your life pursuit as you are, some even more so than you. So, knowing that the spirits reach out to you from the heavens to help you understand their love is the next step toward lifting that spiritual blockage from your thoughts.

“You say that you are unlovable. You learn about the love that you offer others. But do you understand that, in your efforts to keep yourself safe, you are being overprotective? You are being timid with the love you share when you should bravely be putting it forth. Your love is often masked with a crude sense of honesty or laughter that makes other people nervous sometimes.

“The love you share when you are in heavenly conversations with the Father serves a much higher purpose. It is not self-serving, like your horrible attempts to share love through shaky and awkward means. This love would be purer. In a spiritual sense, it would be less emotional and more rational.

“If you mask the love you share in the world with crude, self-serving honesty, where you disclose only what you feel pressured to reveal, then you will never truly share yourself. Likewise, in a similar, mirror-like reflection, the surroundings will never share themselves with you. Your timidity creates a blockage of light as you accept dishonesty from your rational mind to overcompensate for your shaky emotions. Do you understand how the love you share needs to be a purer form to match what your heavenly God and Father provides to your conversations?

“Author, to receive love from others, you need much more than wishful thinking and superficial undertakings. By engaging in these acts, you are hiding from your light. Your rational mind is responsible for showcasing the love you feel through the heart’s intuition. Therefore, it is showcased through your words and logical analysis. Let me explain.”

The Archangel Gabriel then reached within the heavenly tunnel and retrieved a staff. The golden staff looked substantial and felt like it had weight to it. Or it could have been perceived as magnetic, as I felt drawn to the staff and loved it.

Archangel Gabriel continued, "This holy weight you try to estimate for the reader is only what you make of it. The pull of its attraction can be a repulsion as well, if you want it to be that. So, point your focus inward with the staff. Use it to center the pole in your heart that spins on the vagus nerve. That pole that is behind the spiritual intuition in your heart, and it centers itself as you pull from the knowledge of this heavenly staff. The staff makes your heart truer and purer, making it easier for you to understand the opposite, mirror-like surroundings.

"You need to follow this same process from time to time to center your heart's intuitive prayers. This explains why the heart is not used as a scale for judgment. Though the karmic patterns of left and right, up and down, and outward and inward do offset the personality, the mind receives messages from the rebalanced heart through the limbic system. The central nervous system allows the mind to receive the intuitive advice from the heart. And the mind not only recognizes what it fears within itself, but also begins to see the love from others from a purer standpoint.

"This is getting complicated, so I'll simplify the vision. The tunnel between us is of a spiritual nature. You embed what frightens you into those tunnels, resulting in a calming effect in your reality. As you listen to the heart, the nervous system is in control, not the fear in the limbic system. The

center of your soul, the emotional psychic self, is within the balanced mind. And since you are using your intuitive prayers in the heart, the pole has shifted or flipped multiple times to make the imaginary real or the real imaginary.

“Author, what you have suggested earlier about the staff was correct. It helped you decide to redirect the focus of your love from other people to yourself. Now that you are able to love yourself, you can share why this love exists as a strange and wondrous phenomenon. That is, in a purer form. Since your love for your surroundings and the tunnels of positive prayers comes from that spiritual side of your heart, you might begin to notice signs. This attunement with the spiritual side of Heaven imbues your thoughts with emotional value.

“The intuition you experience by listening to the love in your surroundings is an emotional understanding of your logic. Your rationale will flip and rotate in the mind as you listen to the prayers conveying that love’s request. And in the network of tunnels, you may recall memories that you attribute to your spiritual family and the heavens. It could be a physical experience that confirms the rationale of your mind, listening to the spirit. This may not sound probable or logical, but with practice, the heavens will provide emotional validation to experiences from other spiritual sources.”

The Archangel Gabriel sighed, “Author, the signs that you might understand through the heart and therefore, the mind, are like puzzles. The people in your surroundings share their thoughts with you in the magnetic waves of their hearts, among other organs. However, the heart produces the largest magnetic wave encoded with information. If you

sense the heart and identify what your emotions are sensing with a rational mind, then you will develop the gift of psychic maturity.

“The heavens show you their thoughts in the universe as well. Not as the typical thoughts of sentient beings, but of the heavenly love we described earlier. The tunnel to grace is the love the Lord Christ shares. And in that tunnel that maximizes your understanding of the surrounding love, you begin to elevate your vibration.

“Author, the next thing you need to know about curing a spiritual block is not of angelic wisdom. Removing the block requires human participation. It is through your efforts in life that you can demonstrate an understanding of the Lord’s love. This world that made you feel terrified was, to a large extent, made up. Your mind created the reality you perceived of the surrounding world. And in that exchange or flip, where you went from sensing the world with the mind to the heart, you grew stronger and braver.

“Author, there are very few people who ‘see’ this deeply into their own flawed selves. And, from a heavenly standpoint, the wisdom you share about this blockage of yours is outstandingly accurate. However, this story is meant to guide the readers as well. After all, the choices they make about their own perceptions of spiritual love are just as consequential as yours. So let us focus on the reader now.

“Reader, the spiritual love from the heavens exists all around you, in tunnels of light, love, and laughter. This jubilation from the Holy Spirit surrounds your heart as you share your expectations or your feelings. But reader, when you are

provided with knowledge or serendipitous moments, you are presented with choices.

“The love we feel, in a spiritual sense, allows our existence to have purpose. Let me explain. For change to occur, there needs to be a slight level of hope that the outcome will be different. And the choice we are discussing here is the reaction to new information concerning a moral resistance or blockage. Our awareness of this information generally starts somewhere deep down in the subconscious mind.

“Oh reader, when you perceive that the spiritual heavens are using signs to guide you, would you not let yourself be vulnerable and act in accordance with their directions? Those moments bring choices, and acting based on guidance from God and your spiritual family provides meaning to the outcome. Therefore, the moments when God’s invisible hands intervene are part of a co-creation story for you and your network of tunnels. The people you pray with, if they themselves are guided by prayer, may also intervene and help guide you.

“Now, reader, we can begin discussing the actions you can take to live a purposeful life. We react to the world with emotions based on intuitive reasoning. Then we run everything through the filter of our cold and calculating thoughts. But by changing our actions, based on our trust in the subconscious and heavenly heartfelt intuition, newer perspectives are revealed. A growth mindset, as it is called, emerges. And in learning to love, one gains mastery of new thought processes. This superconscious, grounded in the love embedded in all things manifesting through prayer circles, is really just an awareness.

“Reader, there will be a moment when you will gain confidence in who you are and the beliefs that you share with the world. This trust in the heavens is purer than thought reflective of your own spirituality. In it, you gain an understanding of how you may grow. The choices you make toward maintaining that trust then are liberating, as you can cherish the path taken toward something real or solemn for yourself. That jubilation felt in a path taken is good and wholesome, as it results from the transformation from insecurity to confidence. And the mastery over intuitive prayers driving the actions in support of purpose is excellence. Sharing the path from where one came from to the present offers hope to all in your prayer circles.

“Author,” said the Archangel Gabriel, speaking directly to me once again, “now that we have discussed with the readers how their own moral compass in the heart guides their minds and actions, we will explain how that compass directs us beyond that.

“Think about the map and staff that you were shown. I will use your unlovable spirit as a rock for this story’s example. When you act according to your heart, you gain an awareness of the love surrounding you through prayer circles, which involves the superconscious.

“Author, a feeling of jubilation is woven deeply into those tunnels of love and light. That self-love that comes from the acceptance of the path you took from where you came from to where you are in the present creates harmony.

“You have a peaceful nature inside yourself, Author. Therefore, the love you provide produces a wave that’s different than what’s inside yourself. This results in a calming pres-

ence that people find insightful. This love also, if given with care, can be an iteration of one's own words. Putting emotions into words then produces a humorous tone as well. Let me explain.

"When someone shows love for themselves through their own manifested reality, humor emerges in their jubilation. That feeling of goodness overcomes man's resistance and offers a light in the spiritual darkness of the surroundings. And in humor, we find merriment.

"The map and staff are then the moral compass guiding this jubilation. Author, when all things fail and there is nothing to explore within yourself, or you are exhausted in your own efforts toward growth, try to find the humor and love in the resistance of others. This humor should not be used to highlight someone's insecurities and fault them for their awkwardness. It should be used to show love, and to mirror back the way they might be losing their heavenly gifts if they continue to give in to the temptations of evil. Let the heavens explain.

"Only with a stronger mindset can one effectively mirror the dangers of following temptation. This forethought is only gleaned through reflection on and caring for another's outcomes with good intentions and compassion. Author, and reader, the merriment in helping others achieve different outcomes is the truest nature of divine prophecy. From here in the heavens, we guide you all through the heart. And through that tunnel, which you strengthen by acting on the thoughts we encourage, you find good advice. Putting the advice to use then directs your experiences in life. We see where we can help, but our advice needs reflection, not di-

rection. Typically, the person who allows a blockage to remain and prevent spiritual awareness is in denial or moral slumber. But proceed with care, as they cannot be forced out of slumber, and coaxing them out puts them in a defensive position.

“Author, and reader, the path to the truest agreement between you and others in spiritual love and wisdom is through storytelling. And finding a meaningful story with humor is wise, because humor relies on the power of inclusion to make the point. And that point of agreement where we find ourselves sharing on a topic of life lessons is moral. Our belief systems have changed over time as we learned how to help our friends and family in prayer circles by mirroring actions, and perhaps by collectively reflecting on a topic inspired through the heavens.

“Let the heavens magnetize your tongue and help everyone understand the humor that unfolds. Trust in God and the heavenly angels is paramount for guiding your friends or family through a shared superconscious outcome. That is, say prayers in conclusion to the stories told, thanking God for how events in life unfold. And share that communication from the heavens through adversity and strength.

“No one except the prophets, or the Savior, in his perfection, is able to dwell in the heavens and still remain fully devoted. And yet, putting forth the effort to find the right words, the right emotions, and the right stories to bridge the earth to the heavens with love is a worthwhile pursuit. However, it is only perfect for very few men. Not many understand the spiritual principles of Heaven well enough to be acknowledged as prophetic. Certainly, this level of maturity

is not something that one can achieve within a short time-frame.

“Author, it may take years to develop a basic understanding of these principles. Maturity is, in a sense, understanding how to overcome life’s obstacles. And through the stories you tell, you share your own understanding with others, as a legacy. This legacy, which involves your prayer circle, perpetuates your prayers with the help and wisdom of others. Over time, we share ourselves in the stories in hopes that we achieve lasting influence or immortality. This standard we hold ourselves to can resonate between people, establishing a shared culture that helps people see and interpret their own lives through a unique and meaningful lens. Each person who feels your loving embrace, sees awareness as valuable, and hears and abides by the stories told is contributing to the establishment of cultural influence.

“Reader, the legacy you share may only be hampered by resistance. The light takes time to penetrate spiritual blocks. It is not up to you to resolve another person’s spirituality or lack thereof. All we can do is reflect, pray, and share guidance from our own living experiences.

“Author, and reader, the spiritual blocks come and go when we are faced with challenging times. Emotions that are blocked and frozen in our thoughts are etched into our memories. Self-sabotage and application of new wisdom both play a part in human evolution. But growth occurs when we understand our legacy and overcome our challenges.”

The Archangel Gabriel looked inquisitively at me. He said, “Author, your heart is pulsating, but the inward and

outward movement appears to have a magnetic pull. When you started this conversation, you were passively allowing the wave to flow outward from your chest, and that has changed. You have since drawn love inward from the surroundings and modified your mindset to alter your limiting beliefs. In particular, you corrected the limiting belief that you are unlovable.

“The pole that flips back and forth, inward and outward, in the vagus nerve of the heart is active. This imaginary pole, which pulsates and alters your mindset by sending information from the heart to the brain, is now balanced. That is because you are now able to love yourself.

“Author, it is ambitious to tell the stories you hear in the present moment. You listen to the stories, which include moral guidance, and then you write them down. But now, take a moment to just breathe. Let the present moment be all you hear. Let your mind relax. Let the heart beat rhythmically. And for a moment, you may be able to hear Jesus, the Lord and Savior, through your heart.”

I followed the Archangel’s instruction and rested for a moment. The moment itself was listening intuitively in the spirit, heart, and mind. Any action taken, any movement, was an impulse of stored energy.

“Author, the spiritual block that was causing the resistance of love from the surroundings and the heavens has been released. And by releasing the stagnant thought patterns, something of a void has returned to usefulness, replenished with a new understanding of how to purposely celebrate the heavens with good intent.

“If you were to tell the readers how to overcome resistance and use that newfound ability to love, how would that go?”

And in that moment, when the potential energy that was to be used creatively by heart and mind became activated, I heard a distant voice in my consciousness. One that corresponded with the pulses of my heart. And in my mind, I continued to listen and form an awareness of such love. That emotional congruence was meant to signify that the voice was from Heaven.

God was in my thoughts then, with an aura of magnificent power. The voice was given breath, and I relished in that feeling of grace from the heavens. I wish words could better inform readers how that light from the spirit and heart came through to my mind. As I exhaled, the magnetic pulse flipped and flowed out from my chest. I chose to remain still in that moment, as I focused on helping others experience the heavenly light and love that I felt in the presence of the heavens.

In my network of prayer, I expected to gradually strengthen those connecting tunnels by breathing in the love from my surroundings. And as this became my focus, I heard God in my intuitive thoughts.

“We received a heavenly wish from you, Author. You have asked to include Jesus in your prayer circle to further expand his throne in a kingdom of worship. This will only occur through love of the community that can witness his grace. He will lift up the hearts of those in need of his love. By that, he will resurrect their bones in the world and in Heaven. Author, do you not understand this yet?”

“You breathe love in and breathe his love out. That kingdom of his love is then strengthened in a superconscious awareness. The language you understand now will change as your network with humanity increases. And your understanding of the points made will change, and you will become less resistant to his love.

“As we work to understand this shared love, the actions we take and topics we discuss become absorbed into our culture. Culture, therefore, is like the air that is breathed. It is how meaning penetrates our mindsets, perspectives, and language.

“Author, by allowing the love of Jesus to reset your heart, over time, it will determine the heart’s wave patterns. You will give control of your heart to the King and Savior. And by learning that purer form of love of your surroundings and yourself, you will ultimately learn the secret to life.

“For now, I will tell you that the secret of living for your God with every beat of your heart is temptation. By this, I mean that those who have such passion and drive to devote themselves fully to His grace may also have a willingness to take credit for such awareness. However, if you sense that Jesus, the Holy Ghost, and I are present within that stream of consciousness, show us your servitude. Show us your mastery over your own emotions and logic, to enable us, the heavens, to spread the light of Christ. Through this endeavor, you may find confidence in serving a purpose of hope.

“Put your awareness and abilities to use, Author. Show that you understand the heart, beating with waves and embedded with information, by living out our passion for others. Become a servant to others who need to hear the prayers

ring truer. Show them that they are safe when they take risks to share their stories with us in Heaven. Let your body be a tool that carries that information into the surroundings so that others might accept that understanding of the Lord.

“Understand, oh reader, that the Lord is bringing the hearts of the masses back toward the spirit of Christ in Heaven. This is a reversal of the love of the masses for themselves, back inward, to reset humanity. It takes Jesus to bring the light back toward the heavens.

“And once all things breathe together as one unified creation story, the light and love will then exhibit Jesus’ story for Heaven on Earth. His kingdom will be shared among all who accept his love and share it with others, beating in a rhythmic pattern that follows his guidance. So serve Jesus, and serve others, and watch the light grow immeasurably within all. The spiritual blockages will then be exorcized from the earth.

“Author, now that we have discussed the purity of love felt moving inward and outward to the surroundings, I offer one last sentiment. This idea is that all things that grow in the love of the Lord will inevitably become transfixed on their own faults. But this reemergence of consciousness will be forgiven in an act of reparation, that each tear restitched back into the tapestry will strengthen the tunnels of light, love, and laughter. The resonating principles of rationale and love are then shared by this spiritual rebaptism. And the skills that humanity has discovered and shared with Jesus will fully be awakened in the heavens and on Earth.

“Peace to all who understand and experience this effort, as it is an effort to allow the heart to meld with the heavens.

When servitude is reset and shared by prayer and stories, it becomes a magnetism of the spirit, heart, and mind.”

Part Two

A ghost who was full of light said to me, “In a world where you are surrounded by friends, strangers, or loved ones, there are opportunities. These are opportunities for you to create different perceptions for those who are connected to you. But the image that we share with you reveals the real nature of your spirit. Your spirit is good and holy. It sees all aspects of your nature. It wishes to speak to you with a wholesome outlook toward the people in the world. It also wants you to maintain confidence when you might feel angry or frustrated by the events in your surroundings.

“Therefore Author, let us begin with your attitude. The attitude that you present to the world, by which you see yourself and in the perceptions others provide, is slanted. This slanted view is not a true understanding held by you or the other people. The slant is a shortcut that effectively shows how you begin to think through a situation.

“Oh reader, this will make sense to you as well. The Author is trying to accept all possibilities before him through his spirit. The option he should seek, though, is an awareness of expanded consciousness through the heavens. This does not involve the tunnels we share with other people in love and light, however. This expansion of awareness comes from an effort to understand a perspective of your spirit while monitoring your conclusions.”

The ghost became larger, but I don't know whether this was because it had come closer to me or its resonating light had been amplified. This spirit had manifested in my mind's

eye. The mind's eye is in the center of the brain, which I assume receives visions of the spirit realm. Sometimes it is due to clairvoyance that I have these spiritual conversations.

The ghost said, "It is from the feeling from my light source that you get these images of me. I will share more on what your spirit is like now. It is a source in which creativity and creation are one. That point where you derive from, that point is actually moving when you foresee opportunities to communicate. This might be strange to understand here, but the reaction to those insights is heavenly, because creation is all around you now. Let me explain this further. The creation of everything is in opposition to your spirit, but it is love. Your true spirit is whole in Heaven, in the presence of the eternal spiritual light. However, a spot was created in the universes where your spirit inhabits the physical reality. This act of creation mirrors your spirit, but it is in opposition to the heavenly state. In reality, the heavens intervene through your heart, but that spiritual light is felt only psychically, through your emotional intelligence.

"Do you understand yet that your spirit is whole, individual, and forgotten by the heavens as you live in the physical world? And yet, here we move and eat, drink and play, and correct ourselves to better understand our spiritual home."

The ghost paused. My mood felt elevated, which made me think that I was progressing toward a heightened state of awareness in this communication.

"Author, and reader, you must understand this. The spiritual heavens are not dormant. They are active in the world. This transfer of love from the heart to the surroundings, and

from surroundings to the world, is holy. However, inner collapse of the self tends to occur in these moments. And servitude feels burdensome in these moments.

“We have discussed how the universes are separate from the heavens. Your connection to the heavens is spiritual. Yet, we have not touched on the toil of our work and its amplification of our spiritual lives.

“Author, if we do regain understanding of our spirits after that collapse between the heavens and the surroundings, it would mean that our understanding of other people in the physical world is redundant, as it simply echoes our spiritual knowledge of what they are like in Heaven.

“This point is about becoming spiritually aware of the slanted, limited knowledge we might hold in our minds, and how the spiritual knowledge in Heaven awakens the heart. Therefore, before you let the frustration, fear, or anger develop, remember the spirit. And take a moment to pause and search for the feelings in the heart from your spiritual family. There may be frustration, fear, or anger there, for reasons that are known to the spirit. Yet, it is often the case that the mind hijacks the body and rushes to interpret the situation immediately, through a narrow lens, trying to understand the people, beasts, and birds in the situation.

“Author, I say this directly to you. The biases that are uncovered in these slanted views are not to bring any shame at all. You cannot honestly examine or understand the biased perceptions if you feel too embarrassed to admit that you took mental shortcuts or oversimplified the situation. The construct, or your perceptions of reality, needs to be guided by what the heart decides is correct for the moment.

“Author, the spirit inside you wants to talk.”

The ghost then introduced my spirit to me in my heart. I was in the same psychic mindset of awareness in the conversation, and my spiritual form appeared before me. The spirit told me how inspiring it was to be welcomed into the heart, where it could be heard, and through which a conversation could be had and transcribed.

My spirit said, “Author, the discussion about the planes of time and space or the degrees of networked tunnels might frustrate the readers. I look into your universe from the spiritual realm, but I see your universe as reality. Your position in the world is virtual, and you experience this plane as reality.

“However, in the universes, there are other spirits from Heaven projecting their own construct of their reality that is different from your reality. But your nature has not changed drastically from the creation of time to now. The spiritual light that enables tunneling into the universe is carried on wavelengths. And our conscious mind receives and interprets that information before translating it into our reality.

“The reason I bring this up is that your perception of yourself is unique. And understanding that all spirits have a perception of themselves colored by reality. The tunnels unite beings on a deeper level of the heart. However, the connection does not change the spiritual light or the experience of the physical reality.

“Let me explain the perceptions of your universe and your interactions with other people from a heavenly standpoint. The heavens wish to acknowledge that you are limited in your sensemaking capabilities. You understand the senses and therefore make informed guesses about what occurs

based on what you see, hear, feel, smell, and taste. However, this limited information that you perceive does not present you with the whole truth. And when you apply your sense-making processes so you can understand what is actually occurring, it creates biases or slanted perspectives.

“It is therefore important for you to understand that the tunnels in the universes connect the hearts as a collapsing entity back to creation. And in that reversal of separation, the people, beasts, and birds of the universes achieve greater awareness and understanding.

“Author, because your perception is limited, I would like to shed more light on your understanding of others. And in this inspired dialogue, I will show you where you most often become frustrated, fearful, and angry with the surrounding world. Through this learning experience, you will be offered holy grace, which can change and soften your perceptions of love.”

The ghost that introduced me to my spirit then said, “Author, there is a way to understand your perspective as well as your bias. For example, you may examine your relationship with another person by engaging in intuitive prayer to figure out the strength of your connection. And understanding that special connection or serendipitous event through signs in your surroundings may influence decisions made.

“Understand then that the hand of God is within those moments, directing your story. Being able to recognize the surrounding signs and instinctively understand where the patterns in life might take you takes faith. This faith and intuitive prayer is therefore good for both you and the heavens.

“Author, your attention has been turned inward to the heart to understand the prayerful, intuitive process already. However, you were not shown how the heart collapses inward, causing decisions to be made to resolve your slanted perspectives.

“We have shown how your God’s invisible hand is involved in the telling of your story and the correction of the slanted perspectives of limited beliefs. We institute storytelling as a way to nurture from the heavens, through the heart, and then the mind, as a surreal but natural process. So you see, the world collapsing into itself and restoring your place in Heaven as part of one spiritual whole is good. And sound will still exist at that point.”

The ghost continued, “How does sound radiate if it is not able to carry its tune? The heavens consist entirely of information. The realm is of light itself. The spiritual light, then, is a magnificent vision appearing to God Himself. The awakened conscious spirits who understand the heavens are themselves divine beings. Those who radiate a wave then must understand light, love, and laughter, as they are harmonious with the heavenly realm. Therefore, the light itself is both a wave and a whole as one with God in Heaven. And the vibration that radiates from everything creates a harmonizing quality between every spirit there. That means that nothing in that realm is nonsensical. The poles never truly flipped between the heavens and Hell.

“Author, there is a spirit awakened here that shares your limited beliefs, including your sense of being unloved. That spirit has responded in life to you, as damned.

“You have the ability to expand your heart to allow for an awareness of the truth of Heaven. You have already unraveled the questionable bias you held, that you were unlovable, but your rationale was one-sided. Let that spirit in the heavens speak of conversations from your own memories.”

The spirit of my earthly father stepped forward in my heart and mind’s eye. “I used to be harder on you than your brother for a reason. You had misguided intentions. You seemed to drift off when asked to complete your chores. You slept often and carried yourself with arrogance. I felt you were veering off course, and I tried to straighten that path through the attitude I displayed.”

In my memories, I felt anger and jealousy in those moments when my father asked me to take on the responsibilities he enforced. And I pushed back, just as a child inside would. I felt unloved. This feeling built up over the years and caused resentment.

My father spoke once more, “I often talked to you like I did because I gave up on your responses even before you did. You actually fulfilled my prophecy of being lackluster, in part, due to my actions. And your self-conception of unlovableness grew from the silence between us.”

I let that feeling go in my mind. I let go of the erroneous thought that I was unlovable because I did not live up to my earthly father’s corrections. And in some ways, I let my heart forgive myself by letting go of a bias toward my father. His intention was right. It was out of misunderstanding that we became angry and frustrated with each other. And I became alert to how the spirit can influence the universes.

If I had allowed my frustrations to guide me, I would have resisted the prayers from Heaven by my earthly father. And by listening to the spirit with an open heart, I was able to understand the whole conversation, and that sound of love inspired me to accept that love from the heavens.

The ghost said, "You will find a similar outcome for every interaction that you pursue toward separation. The noble quest in life is not to seek confirmation of your own opinions and define those through a set of limiting beliefs. The quest of nobility requires you to allow love to breathe in and out of the heart until the heavens reach you and those in relationships with you.

"Author, the light is like sound in a way, such that all merriment and jubilation from Heaven is one. If you realize this and allow yourself to see how the universes collapse into the heavens, the spiritual family and the spirits of your friends will repair and mend your heart, bringing it back to awareness. The voice within your consciousness, the spirit, is good and whole, speaking with the intent of sharing love through that same atonement.

"Author, your visions of the holy ghost, the spirit, and your spiritual family members are interpretations of the knowledge you have related to making this Heaven on Earth a reality. And in some ways, the creation of that reality has already begun with the acknowledgment of the Savior as the Son of Man and the heavens. Jesus is and always will be the bridge back to a heavenly existence."

Jesus then spoke, "Let all who witness and understand these concepts of Heaven through the heart be made wiser.

This evolution is of spiritual undertaking. And in that light of the spirit, you understand me, your Lord.

“In the universes, there is space and time. This existence you live out is one of limited viewpoint. And, burdened by that bias, the reality of tunnels formed through the heart with the surrounding people, beasts, and birds takes the form of a network. However, after the radiance of the light that empowers all through the heart begins to show, the heart maintains the euphoria of serving the heavens. In this, we share the knowledge that is an understanding of the greatness of the Holy Spirit. Joy and laughter are revealed as they radiate on waves within the universes. That joy is felt as an emotion, but it is actually sound. Let me explain.”

Jesus and my earthly father agreed that joy radiates through the heavens because of an understanding that all within the heavens is infinite. Jesus said, “The realm, and all within it, does not shrink or expand, but it exists. And because the spirits know this, they emulate the wave themselves, letting the joy flow through themselves, moving rhythmically as one.

“When that level of awareness has a physical effect on the heart, the tears and rips from the memories of limiting beliefs can be healed, as in the case of your own unlovable conundrum. The riddle then relates to gaining such awareness of the heavens to reconsider the memories and mend the self. And, as you have witnessed, the answers to what is occurring within the oppositional surrounding universes lie within the spirit.

“Are you ready for this, Author? The universes will understand your position through emotional congruence. That

means that the emotions that send sound out from the heart into the surroundings through magnetic waves also help restore other people's hearts. For through that love, those who are broken and who suffer become aware of the miracles of life from my presence. Let me explain."

Jesus spoke very quietly, "The love you share with the world, the humanization of life for my sake, is a holy practice for an angelic undertaking. You witnessed your spirit evolve in light with heightened awareness. And with that awareness comes a spiritual knowledge that will allow you to grow and to help others in the name of God. That means that, in understanding a purer love through service to the heavens, you have a purer and deeper understanding of the universes. The temptation that provokes you is the desire to take credit for our conversations. Yet you will let go of this ridiculous blockage with time and awareness. And all who are influenced by your heartfelt message will continue to share the light, and they will include me in their prayerful conversation. Therefore, through an angelic measure, you will understand the needs of others and how to influence them. That angelic measure is sound.

"The joy perpetuated through your awareness is meant to help you reunite those on Earth. That joy will travel in sound, carried along with spiritual light into the hearts of others, as you influence the world with magnetic truths that shape reality.

"These miracles occur when love is felt from others and the sins from memories are forgiven. The miracles of the heavens can be further elucidated by the angels."

Jesus stepped away from the conversation in the heart, and the ghost appeared once more. This ghost of holy order shone with a brilliant light. They said, "The holy order of the angels is nonsensical to us. That the understanding of each is unique, yet shared in Heaven, is quite a puzzle to resolve. Furthermore, we also question the diminished light that contributed to the fall of Adam and Eve into the universes. It has long been a mystery why the Tree of Knowledge was planted there, offering forbidden fruit to deceive anyone who could claim themselves superior to other spirits.

"However, there is a new insight into the Tree of Knowledge that is causing ripples in the heavens. And by understanding that joy in harmony, it becomes clear how those who turn away from serving their Lord are drawn into the universes, falling from grace."

The ghost said, "Author, that tree that is rooted into the universes is a reflection of the damned, revealing the conversations between all people, beasts, and birds who are unaware that they create their own limiting beliefs and patterns by perpetuating injustice. Their memories are frozen into their projection from the heavens due to their moral slumber."

The ghost looked upon the waters under the filament of Heaven and said, "Author, the collapse of the universes occurs through loving understanding and awareness, and it is good. This holiest pursuit allows you to understand a bit of angelic knowledge. And by serving God, in the spiritual understanding of shared light, you create miracles through Jesus. Those miracles might be recognized as signs and

serendipitous moments. But they impact more than your awareness.”

The ghost that came from the heavens and shone with amplified light was a source of goodness and purity. That ghost, who had pivotal importance to this story, was foundational to the moral code given as well. There is great importance in the moral of the story, that having compassion within oneself is necessary for loving oneself as a whole. And the tapestry of tunnels of love between all beings, including the angelic, is important.

The ghost said, “Author, where there are angels in the world, there is a direct line for answers from the heavens to the earth. And directly from within the heart comes profound wisdom that affects the co-creation stories of the living beings who interact within the earthly reality. These people, beasts, and birds perceive the stories within themselves, therefore they have a slanted understanding of life, and they need to experience rediscovery of the spiritual light. Let me discuss an idea with you.

“These people, beasts, and birds are following a moral compass. The attraction with all things around them in their surroundings is communication. And you add to that conversation by imprinting your story into the surroundings in ways that are perceptible through their subconscious.

“There are many who will recognize those ideas as heavenly. However, some will have a quest for conflict so rooted in denial or burden that they will fight the stories you share from the heavens.

“Author, there is a realm of angels that is created in the heavens and waiting to be established on earth. But the pos-

sibility of fighting the evil of the serpent is very real. And those angelic beings who understand God in Heaven also understand what will be needed to defeat the serpent.

“Author, you are beginning to realize that you need to exalt the heavens and put your spiritual light to use in this lifetime. As God is in control of your heart, the wisdom and grace that befalls you, through your actions and moral compass, is heavenly. This wisdom, the knowledge of what must be done for more angels to reenter and establish a foothold for the kingdom of Heaven on Earth, is pure love.”

The holy ghost that had introduced my spirit then reentered the conversation. “Author, your spiritual light is appreciated. It was accepted and now works within the tunnels connecting the people, beasts, and birds in the surroundings. However, this angelic understanding of the spirit is part of your story as well. The roots of the Tree of Knowledge are understood well enough that you do not need to eat from that tree to nourish an identity of humanity. That is, the angelic self that your spirit understands can be of a heavenly knowledge. The root of your knowledge is from the spiritual light in the Garden of Paradise and not necessarily of the Tree of Knowledge.”

And God, through my spirit, said, “Let my words pass through your humanity. Let my wisdom be constructed through the energy that your heart puts out in magnetic waves. Let that truth be served in a chaotic world. And then, let us, in the heavens, establish a place within the world where mankind’s kingdom can be formed.

“The fountainhead of spiritual awakening in angelic stories is the Truths testified to by the holiest being, the Savior

and Lord, Jesus Christ. Let all who understand this story of the return of the Savior know that there is a progression of angelic hymns that will sound before his return. And those angelic beings, triumphant in fighting the evil within the surroundings, will exalt the Christ.

“Author, there are many who will fight to tell the stories of Christ’s intervention in their lives as they influence the wicked with their praise of the holy. And in this swell of spiritual stories told will be an awakening toward the heavens in each heart. However, a battle of sin and miracles will reemerge. The stories of the angels are proof of a living, breathing, holy existence of spirituality. But miracles need to be discovered and explained by those who understand the intervention of the Lord Christ. They realize that wisdom and storytelling need a substantive outlook. Those who are awakening from being wicked wish to see, feel, and taste, hear holy wisdom through the miracles of the Lord.

My spirit then said, “Oh reader, there are those in the torment of damnation who are waiting to be cleansed. Their limiting beliefs and spiritual blocks keep them at a lower vibration, which only serves to prolong their torment. They hide in the face of God and then reawaken to the life of sin for the depth of their humanness.

“And likewise, those who are good and holy are the purer love that is of the spiritual world. And in that mastery of sharing the love sent from God, their heavenly paradise is regained. Also, in the triumph over the devil’s temptations, angelic wisdom allows miracles to intercede in the lives of those who toil.”

From within my heart, my spirit said, “The angelic wisdom gained in these stories is valuable, as it will help the masses explore their own spirituality and bring about the time when the Lord is present on this earth. And in that time, as we begin to regain the kingdom of Heaven on Earth, the overflowing love that is good and whole with the heavens will abide in the hearts of these light scholars.

“There is no one in the world who can hold both God and the serpent in their heart. For when God’s light shines through, the tangled contradictions of sin begin to unravel, unfolding into unity with the heavens. Then, through the heart, we collapse into oneness with the Father and God, all the same. For this, God will now discuss what He wants in the world.”

The Heavenly Father to all His children on Earth said, “Give this some deliberate thought, Oh readers. Reflect over it carefully, and come to your understanding through your own journey back to me and the heavens.

“My children experience the merriment of the tunnels of love, light, and laughter as they continue to develop good practices.” God continued, “The book containing the records of the universes will hold the names of those who master their shadows and the serpent itself. The people who search out my heavenly abode in passionate pursuit will become one in atonement with the heavens. In this world, those stories are shared. And in the records where all those who came before appear in a single narrative, that is where my holy son is found. He is a bridge to Heaven. But as he comes back as Lord to witness the defeat of the sins of humanity, he will also embrace those stories to be told. Those

are the records of what has been, and what will be the challenges of the tormented and the uplifted.

“These books that are in my left and right hands will be explored, as all who master the servitude of love for mankind are saved. Author, this is important. The books that will record the humans are rational, and searching will not need to be perfect. Their love in the spiritual light of paradise will afford them my grace.

“Their spirits will understand the connections from Heaven to the universes. And those in the records of humankind whose voice speaks in their consciousness when the spiritual light reaches into their heart, they will be given forgiveness.”

God continued, “Oh readers, that you and the angels will become one in the earth with the Lord Jesus is grand. It is a creation story of mine fulfilled.

“Author, you will allow the waves of mankind’s love to reach me. Therefore, speaking with you is a gift of humanity. The subconscious signs that connect all those in prayer circles will allow the spiritual light to breathe in and out of the universes with me in Heaven.

“Oh readers, the serpent will be defeated soon. The evil that tempts all in heart and mind will be cleansed. And befriending the concepts within the book of grace in my right hand will soon be understood. That is, the Lord who comes back will, in time, guide the masses on the straight path from which the books will be read. Thus, those given grace on the earth will understand their stories of redemption through the holy ghost. This reckoning or awakening to a holy pur-

pose for serving the Lord and heavens, this will be their conscious reality.

“Those being read to from the book of grace and forgiveness, by their understanding of the spiritual light in paradise, will be awakened from their slumber.

“And in these moments of grace and forgiveness, to allow miracles to take place through the Lord’s love, the angelic wisdom will mount. The trumpets of angels will be felt in the chest, and they will shake the bodies of those who hear the music of spiritual mastery.

“Author, the sound of the trumpets is of jubilation. And that day of reckoning is upon you. Keep moving forward in that angelic wisdom as you endeavor to defeat the devil and regain mankind’s throne for the Lord. The day of reckoning is one that will turn the damned into history. That book of damnation in my left hand will then be sealed.”

God said, “Author, these are the last moments of the records of that book of damnation. The stories of those who had refused their opportunity to please me in Heaven will be severed. And I will reap from the garden of paradise to nourish those who stayed alongside me. Those stories will be shared as light, love, and laughter in the garden once more. This spiritual knowledge given to the angels will be actualized, first, through the angels, and then, through the witnesses who testify.”

Trumpets Calling

Part One

The angelic sounds from afar brought me into a conversation with the heavens. And with me in that conversation was the angel Raphael. He said, “All who read this shall understand one important idea – that the lives around you are unsettled and in constant motion. The movement of all things, ripping and tearing themselves apart and repairing themselves, is foundational to the living systems of life on Earth and in the universes.”

The angel Raphael continued, “Praise rings out for all the spiritual connections in life. Those on Earth who are knowing or who become aware of these connections, let them become heavenly as their faith increases. Let their spiritual inclination bring them to the fount of spiritual rebirth, and into their heavenly home. And in that rebirth, where they cool the torments of the sinfulness in their souls by drinking the spiritual waters, they will once more master the art of compassion.

“This homecoming to the heavens requires those who are sinful to face trial. And in that trial, where sins that were waged are weighed against faith, they may find redemption. Grace, then, is bestowed upon those who have shared their wisdom with others to help them find connection in the spiritual heavens. Therefore, that nourishment that they provided through their talents on Earth provides nourishment in Heaven for their souls.”

The angel Raphael continued, “Author, there are moments throughout the days in a person’s earthly life when

they focus their efforts on learning how their spirituality and their relationships mutually strengthen each other. These connections are then made known to God in Heaven. And with the introduction of God into the conversation, this new and holy paradigm shall transpire.”

The angel Raphael said, “In wisdom, there is nourishment for the soul. And when that wisdom is shared, connections are made in the tapestry of life. The understanding gained through these connections is far more varied and complex than what can be gained through spiritual prayer circles alone. As you build upon your connections in life, you feed others wisdom, and you receive the forgiveness asked of the heavens.”

Then, in His magnificence and glory, God entered the conversation. He explained that He was not there merely to offer a contextual understanding of the stories that I transcribe from my conversations, but also to nurture me and the readers who follow Him toward the graceful springs of the fountains in Heaven.

The angel Raphael asked, “God, are you that compassionate and merciful? Would you allow this mortal man a chance to understand your ways?”

And God responded, “Listen carefully, for there is much to discuss. The anthology of mankind on the earth has been in question since the downfall of Adam and Eve.” Then He said to me, “Author, there is a growing insistence from the spirits in Heaven that the day for repentance be acknowledged. As was written, the time of repentance will come. This day will bring an illumination of conscience whereby the humans who have grown disgruntled can face the spirits,

heavenly and holy. They find a purer attitude of grace, not merely within themselves, but in the nurturing given by me in Heaven.

“All beings live in a time where episodes of spiritual miracles occur over days, not longer. Each day is a period of growth for my children, and this growth will bring about the awareness to understand that something is being built that is more powerful than anything else known to man. The power, however, is not of man, but in the efforts of the work done by man to establish a law that is consistent with the day of reckoning. And that final day of the sinful and wicked will be established in this era of mankind.

“This means that the spiritual and angelic beings from Heaven will take physical form in the world. The call of the trumpets has begun. And the sound that vibrates with spiritual delight through each person’s chest is one of knowing satisfaction. That is, the wisdom they hear is their forewarning of the end of days, or the day of reckoning. Those who hear and follow the beat of my living word in the Savior Jesus Christ will understand that the gift he gave of himself will be present in life. And the nourishment found in this new knowledge of the rise of a kingdom, and through connecting and spreading the Word, is good and pure.

“I do not wish to establish a rule of authority over mankind that dictates the movement of the world’s inhabitants. My desire is to establish grace. However, those who are wicked will fail me, as they will fail to understand this grace within themselves. They will perish by fire and torment as the sun disappears from their sky.

“Their night of agony will begin after three days of suffering and pain. Their torment will be a descent into darkness. And from this darkness will emerge the sound of the gnashing of teeth and the cries of their souls, cursing those who are holy. And that descent into the hellfire of spiritual damnation will mean the end of their return to the earth or the heavens. After the remainder of their years on Earth, the shadow devils will guide them into torment.

“Through connections of praise made by the faithful, I will return, that I may fulfill my promise of paradise on Earth. The fathers of the past will reawaken to me from their graves. And the mothers of the generations will fight through the spirits of all women to mold the children into upright and proud servants to the Lord. Therefore, all those who were in the graves, who lived throughout humanity and who bore children, will cede their souls in Heaven to return once more to the earth, in spirit.”

I withdrew from the conversation, since I had no children. But, knowing that I was curious about this circumstance, God drew me back into the discussion.

“Author, there are many who have not borne children who will nevertheless find their home in the paradise called Earth. And yet, I speak in terms of generations of followers. So remain steady, and I will continue.”

And God proclaimed, “There will be many people in the coming generations who will understand how angels intervene in life through their words and actions. And this nourishment shall mark the second wave of trumpets sounding. The angels of this earth will continue to pursue peace in the world. These soldiers of Heaven march forward in

heavenly service toward the Lord's kingdom. And in pursuit of that honor of their heart's conscious understanding, they will speak to many. Their thoughts are found in their universal book of prophetic wisdom."

God paused a moment before He spoke again. "The damned will suffer. And as time moves forward, their population will diminish, particularly as more and more gain spiritual insight. As more people receive heavenly wisdom and awaken to their angelic home, the desire to bring that awareness to the masses will grow among them.

"Author, there is a connection between every single person, place, and thing in the world. And in paradise, this becomes a connection between all as a whole, unified and complete. We in Heaven encourage the sharing of education and wisdom in the world. And in those days of darkness and reckoning, the spiritual illumination and awareness will prevail, spreading farther and faster as more share their knowledge, until no temptation remains.

"This will take hundreds of years to accomplish. It shall not come to pass until Satan has been muted and crushed. Then, the paradise will be sustained in my heavenly home.

"Listen, Author, for the story I tell now is about how you will come to me and ask my forgiveness. And how all men and women will come to me in repentance. The glorious day of awakening to the angels on Earth may begin to create light and allow people to hear my words through my resonance in their hearts."

Then God remarked, "Misery in my sight is when humankind fails to choose itself over the temptations of the serpent. And in those temptations, they scratch and claw at

each other's eyes, noses, teeth, ears, skin, and tongues in such a way that they lose their sensibilities and their sense of common good.

“When mankind reaches that measure, all must become one with the heavens. Their atonement and return to oneness with the Creator, the Father, is good and wholesome.

“Author, would you like to know who is responsible for each of those scratches and claw marks? It is not me or the heavens, but the serpent himself. Many people are uncertain about who made the decisions for them, and many believe it is me. And in that mistaken identity, they look for their master to save them on the day of reckoning.

“The serpent disguises his voice when he speaks to his followers, but he will be master only to those who fail to recognize their truest master in the heavens. As they thwart the heavenly God by turning away, the god they follow leaves scratches and scars on their friends and family and community. However, Satan will be at a loss for words when faced with the spiritual light on the last day.

“In those three days of darkness, the souls who are lost will fall into Hell and join the serpent. And in such fire, they will gnash their teeth, their ears will hear sirens, their eyes will see nothingness, their noses will smell fire, their skin will feel torment, and their tongues will taste bitter acid. With the decimation of these senses, their serpent master will be destroyed, crumbling into itself. And what was from nothing will remain in silence, forever muted, for Satan will tempt no more. Although he may have overwhelmed my heavenly abode through storms, plagues, disease, and death, he will not be triumphant over me. And, like any other being in all

the universes, he had the ability to say he was disobedient and needed my love in his heart.

“Author, these stories you have heard in your heart are meant to help you follow the right path. They will allow the accomplishments fueled by your passion to exceed my ambitions for your life. However, there is a right path to choose, and it leads toward an understanding of the heavenly paradise. And to follow that path is to eat from my Tree of Life.

“Now I work through these stories, drawing you from a distance into closeness with me. As the Heavenly Father, I would have agreed that your actions were a miracle, in a way, for I did not always intervene when you listened and created the stories you presented. But you found other spiritual beings, including your own spirit, who shed light on the journey, so there are flaws in the stories, for what you perceived in communication with them is not identical to what would have been revealed to you in full oneness with me.

“Author, there is no higher ambition for us to understand in your case. Your journey was determined through conversations and soul searching, and this journey led you to me in your lifetime. And therefore, as your God, I will offer you the chance to repent. That is, if you come forth in the spiritual life, you shall eat manna in paradise.

“Those who nourish themselves with my fruit will gain insight and wisdom, and in doing so, they will also create their own obligation of service. But in no way will I attempt to deceive you. And the temptations of Satan will fall away into nothingness. Therefore, as you keep communicating with those in the heavens and explaining what you witness, you will find favor with me in Heaven.

“When the trumpets sounded, the agony of mankind was released, providing further proof that you are in the end of days. In this situation, you fear nothing, Author. And you will have nothing but proud reactions from me. As for so many others, however, they will lie and cheat their way into the torment of hellfire.

“Author, take this fruit from the Tree of Life and be nourished. Let the stories you convey be free of lies and deception. Any discrepancies between the words you write and those you hear shall be reconciled in your heart once more. Thus, you are protected.

“But you should endeavor to absorb the wisdom of one majestic saint from the past. And with the knowledge gleaned from the fruit of the Tree of Life, and from the pages of the saint’s book, you will be saved, and you will save others.

“The word that was breathed into your stories will lead you to an ending with me in Heaven. In paradise, we will be together.

“Meanwhile, the warring factions of humankind, those who scratch and claw at one another, destroying each other’s senses, will vanish from the world. This will occur over a span of years, and all who exist now shall see and understand the process. However, throughout the years, as they relive the book of wisdom, their resistance and past memories will change.

“Author, my service to humankind is not fixed. It is a lively spirit that will serve all those who listen to the heart for the sounds of the angelic trumpet. And in that moment when they hear it, the memory of Satan will fail them. And

they who will follow me to paradise and be mentored under my love will let that adversary fall. For it is in this memory that temptation gives rise to sin. In it, my love is resisted. Ultimately, humankind will resist my love to the extent that they experience the unfurling of the tapestry of paradise in their own world.

“How does mankind, which follows the trumpets of angels, create or devise such wisdom in the world? Within the tapestry of life, my living waters form an angelic fountainhead of flowing love. The angels provide and clear the straight path forward in the hearts of many. Their loving embrace is inspired by my love, and they offer charity and act in accordance with my heavenly teachings.

“Let the light of the Savior return through the world. This spirit of Christ is alive in all spiritual light. That is, the spiritual light is amplified by my Word in his transformation to human form. That transformation from spiritual to physical being is of the heavens. That emotional feeling you receive from me is like being lifted into the sky. Each person will keep reliving this experience as they continue to embrace Christ’s love throughout their time as light scholars.

“The wisdom of the Word I provide is harmonized among many tongues and received by each according to their understanding, as it reaches everyone at once. For my followers will not only feel the angelic trumpet’s sound a second time, but they will encounter Jesus in his worldly form.

“The serpent will see, taste, touch, smell, and hear the efforts of all those who are tempted and fallen. They will work against you to keep you from the loving embrace of the angels. And yet, your belief in my Word will keep you on a

straightened path to my loving light. The joy that will be felt is beyond imagination, as all who have been nourished will welcome this nature to the world from within. Humankind will then act as one in heart.

“The spirits of old will be heard, and they will say that those who accept their angelic wisdom will overcome all who resist. This spiritual tradition of spreading the knowledge of prophetic wisdom will carry on throughout the world.

“But despite the abundance of wisdom being shared across the world, no saint or spiritual visionary has shared any new ideas of my love. This includes you, Author. Though you have shown obedience, you continue to learn only from the past as you act through charity to share your knowledge with those who want my understanding. To understand and turn away from the serpent is the moment from which a great story shall emerge through a shared humanity.

“Give yourself time to understand this love. And give me the sovereignty I command in my kingdom as you share this story in the world. Do not look for any spirit other than me. I am and will be the holiest order. And in our conversation, I will share the words to be written in your books.

“Take comfort, for I will give you time to understand, to work up the courage to say that these are my thoughts on my worldly perceptions, and to say the Lord has intervened. The wisdom shared in the traditions from the past to the present forms the foundation for the answers that may now resonate with everyone. Through the words you hear and turn into written stories, I will share my wisdom. And as the trumpets

sound, I will share the feeling of resonance with my children on Earth.

“Author, when that feeling resonates in your heart, you will become whole with my people and favored as one who leads with emotions. The heart will reveal to all the spiritual world behind a veil of lies and disgraceful sin. This veil of darkness forms a spiritual block that must be removed from those who live in temptation, suffering from greed, lust, and envy.

“Cool the tongue. Live in my Tree of Life, as its roots intertwine with another system of tunnels that have become unfurled in humanity. And let the Tree of Knowledge be lit with flame.”

As the meditation deepened, God said to me, “Author, I have sensed a change in attitude in you since we began this conversation about the sounding of trumpets and the day of reckoning. Did you realize that you were angrier before? The transparency I’ve offered with my Word has helped you understand how your attitude was misguided before now. Now the understanding you feel within yourself is present and alive!

“That place in your spirit where all things were dead to you before, there is a name for it. You experienced some abysmal situations in your youth because of the denseness of this feeling. But you have used denial to mask your feelings about these things about yourself. And Author, that denial of spirit was a troublesome foe, a block over which you stumbled as you let others tell you what you should be like. It invited temptation to hide your true self and avoid becoming a leader in this world.

“This story now takes on new gravity as you recognize the truth of what I have told you. Now, I want you to move past the attitude or laziness that lets you blindly follow what others think and submit to weak-minded individuals. You must remain stronger than them. Author, as you become a leader, as trumpets are sounded and felt in your chest, you will feel a noble reckoning announcing the power of me, your God.

“It is through this power, which is not only felt but gifted to others, that you begin to understand freedom. The grace within my love is precious. That alone should keep you from committing acts of wickedness. Just hold steady for a moment to understand the greatness I want for you.

“This attitude is carried in your memories throughout your life as well. Early on, you let others speak for you and define your voice. But the voice of the narration will regain clarity, and recognizability as your own, throughout your life. You will understand how others influenced your attitude and tempted you to cross your loved ones. Author, this may seem stark. And the difference may seem subtle, in comparison to the past. But this process helps you to hear my word in your heart, as it purifies the heart, where I abide for moments throughout your life with your spirit.

“My grace is something which the powerful want but cannot purchase. As all becomes clear to them and they realize they cannot have these tender moments, they gnash their teeth and cry, moan, and wail for the devil to receive them as I have you. Author, there is nothing the devil will say or do for them. Nothing that will help them ease their burden or that makes them feel alive.

“Think no more of the trumpets sounding or the day of reckoning. I will now bestow upon you a maturity of voice and vision.

“Author, there will come a moment where all things that are not torched in the world will be elevated in light to the heavens. Those who have a spiritual inclination will understand that elevation, in spiritual terms, means growth in spiritual knowledge. And the roots and branches of the Tree of Knowledge will be left as ash and dust on the heavenly ground.

“This is a safe place for you, Author. You will not need to sense or endure any physical effort here. Your spirit will understand this before your conscious mind, but the effort you must put forth to act or move objects now will be no more in the heavens.

“Author, when you begin to embrace the people you will lead, you will follow this advice. However, out of fear, you will be tempted to erect and fortify walls as a stronghold to protect your spirit. Maintaining these walls, and therefore, engaging in actions to try to control the world around you, will only tempt you to fall to a lower level of spiritual understanding.

“The people that you will lead will no longer need concrete evidence showing how you influenced the world. Instead, they will sense your love and find that to be your attractive quality. Therefore, Author, be generous with your love and be mindful of the temptation to erect the walls that would hold you within a prison.

“Come to me in your heart now. Come be elevated to where you feel the heavens engulf your world. Be free of the

denial you place yourself in. Let the warmth of love wash over you. And make this ability to forgive yourself a truer strength. Forgive yourself for letting others talk and make decisions for you. And though it was merely an error, it helped form the foundation of your personality. But now you are freed, and alive.

“Author, I am your God. Your prayers have shown me your worldview and what you value most in all the universes. Your constant devotion helps the love manifest in your relationships. Practice allowing this love to flow, from within me and you. Let the heart be shared in the world, where love is given and pursued. Remember how forgiveness through me feels. It is a grace to bestow on others who hurt you.

“Author, this search for relationships with other people is not a pursuit of physical love. For within it is the feeling of a truer and more noble understanding of grace – forgiveness for allowing yourself to be vulnerable to them. In that vulnerability, you have witnessed their hurt and felt their suffering as well.

“Author, I know it does not seem radical to believe that all beings will connect through the Holy Spirit, but some do not know what it means to have a personality that is alive. As they scoff to themselves in their thoughts and become steadfast in their denial, they will usher themselves into their own torture through acts of cowardice, but in their physical performance, they try to veil their pursuits under a cloak of light, masquerading as joy. They will hold themselves confidently in the world, until their reckoning comes and they are not held in my Holy Spirit in Heaven.

“Author, we should discuss this feeling of being alive. Can you think of a time when you wanted to be impulsive but felt love for the moment instead? In the moments when you follow your impulses, you act in accordance with a feeling instead of letting go of your desires and finding the loving embrace of your God.

“Do you want to share your love? Then do so with me at the foundation of your faith. Believing in what brought you into my loving embrace will be the bedrock of every ounce of faith you have. This faith is me. You do not believe in me to prove anything anymore. That urge to persuade, that impulse to show others, is not necessary.

“The love in my heavenly abode is within your heart. Simply allowing that feeling to dwell within you will impact your leadership skills.

“In the great fall of the serpent, the mind was discovered as the weakness of all creation in humanity. This weakness was the misunderstanding that what they thought was entirely their own perspective rather than a shared understanding where all emotions perceived are combined into logic. Therefore, each person saw similarities between their thoughts and others’ but allowed for these thoughts to override their own conscious voices.

“The emergence of these emotional incongruences between the unique understanding of each person and the way the world understands them was seen as a humorous shift of self-conscious behavior. This timidity became a gateway for the devil to use temptations to pit people against each other.

“Author,” said the Holy Father, “use the stories told to you no more as you have been. From here, you will discuss

the temptations to wage war, create plagues, cause death, and bring famine to all as the assault on humankind. However, the cracks in the logic cause the whole structure to fail, as we underestimate our own knowledge of consciousness, believing it is too limited. People secretly want to have all the answers.

“This purer love for me in Heaven then will illuminate this situation better as I help to eradicate your self-serving impulses to join me in the heavenly creation story. This book of records will then be between yourself and humanity, and it will elucidate my wishes.

“Author, the conscious voice in your heart sings praise for all humanity, encouraging them to overcome the limitations that make them feel they need to bring about a doomsday in civilizations. The doomsday predictions of the man-made creations of war, plague, death, and famine are of the serpent’s blind ability to outmaneuver those who secretly live for themselves to provide answers against humankind. They claim that power is needed to control the populations. They then play the game of the serpent’s temptations, in which they grow in wealth.

“Author, there is a purer love that radiates from me to your readers. This belief in themselves to pursue a higher order than a doomsday prophecy is wholesome because it is my Word that fulfills their lives.

“As you were ascended into the gates of my loving paradise and drew from the Tree of Life, so will these readers be treated to the manna which flows here. And the fight to organize humanity will be served by the truest master, the Lord, and the Savior in Christ.

“Author, you will understand that the maturation of faith over time will destroy the logic of any doomsday prophecy that can be promised through the machinations of temptation and mind control. The secrets faced by all humanity to serve only God in Heaven are sought. These riddles of a certain kind, which help us understand how our spiritual light brings salvation, are good and wholesome.

“People must sacrifice the pursuit of their own desires and devote themselves entirely to following my son. As he is my loving sacrifice, my children will follow along. Author, do you understand that the riddle in following a spiritual life to feel alive is one of maturity? It is not an understanding of past memories, or learning through impulse or control, that brings awareness. It is through sacrifice in the pursuit of ideals for the benefit of all that one finds elevation in spiritual knowledge.

“Let me guide you to this spiritual knowledge. The intuitive side of emotional awareness is the place where you establish an understanding of love. And in gaining that knowledge, you will find order regarding why and how to be. This is where compassion exists. As you may recall, those who are tortured are able to escape the serpent’s grasp through my forgiveness, in remembering me, and answering my calling.

“Therefore, the day of reckoning is one where the devils approach their emotional precipice, where they are vulnerable to all the heavens guiding them toward the torments of their own karmic making.

“The angels will come down in full, where all can experience the loving embrace of their Father and Lord Jesus Christ. And that day will usher in the organization of a sys-

tem for the masses, where all who live are conscious of the emotions of love in their hearts, and the beginning of everlasting peace will begin.

“There is much more to this system, though. In establishing a system of love for community, it must be ensured that all community members understand their conscious attitudes. Achieving this understanding of light and prayers manifesting within, and that directed out into the surroundings, takes patience.

“In Heaven, where all will understand me as their Father, keeping them alive and elevated, there will be servitude of Jesus.”

Part Two

“Deep down in the graves of mankind, where death stands guard and never lets the spirits into Heaven, it is a place of torment. This cavernous lake of fiery damnation is for the wicked to understand, and where they can be fearfully honest with themselves. For when the announcement of the Christ’s return is sounded by the trumpet blown, the massive hellfire pit of torment will be engulfed by its own flames.

“This lake of fire, where all are kept, is inside the bowels of the beast. And where there is a red, fire-breathing dragon, there is an acknowledgment of being possessed by its foolishness. Do not ever be fooled into being like the evil that imposes thoughts upon others. As these shadows cast away your goodness as retribution for the misery released, they can feel envy rising immediately.

“I will explain to you how this feeling of envy is used by those in the hellfire. They see the dragon’s attitude as logical. And people use that destructive logic to mask their thoughts by presenting it to themselves and others as superior to the logic of their own consciousness. Eventually, they absorb the destructive influence of the senses – the sight, taste, hearing, feeling, and wasted breath of the fire-breathing dragon – so fully that they envy it.

“This control over the mind is not forced but is allowed to occur slowly over time. And to convince themselves that they are stronger, the people allow their pain to be shared with others. In this arrogance and disgust is where the

wicked lose their spiritual connection, and they falter and fall into the dark cavern of the belly of the serpent.

“And, Author, the pit of torment is where they will remain, where there shall be no light to save them once the serpent is exercised from my paradise.”

Then God spoke to me quietly, as if my heart might instantly recognize His presence in me. “You can use and showcase your ability to lead people to Christ, even as the Antichrist walks upon the shores of the world. This Antichrist is someone who is damnable for their arrogance and for weakening the discussion between the world kingdoms.

“Author, the world can either grow in harmony with less resistance or suffer the ramifications of disobedience. Many people respond to the chaos in the world with disobedience when the chaos is caused by someone speaking for the people, telling them how to behave. And in arrogance and jealousy, people will turn over in their graves as they say curses upon the other kingdoms.

“War is the way the Antichrist builds its dominion. And through this warring, doomsday becomes a self-fulfilling prophecy. In this, only the elite in each land are deemed worthy to survive, as only the wealthy shall be able to purchase their tickets to a freer state.

“The agony of the world’s people then is caused by arrogance, as disobedience by some will bring others down with them to the torments of death and lies in the hellfire. This pit of despair is then a reality constructed for the majority of the population. It is not the creation story that was crafted through my love. My son, Jesus, would not have allowed the disobedient to establish their dominance. For their devilish

idols have shown their wicked faces to the world. These idols would decide the fate of every person in their worlds, letting each of them perish. However, Jesus will regather the masses before this occurs.

“Through a system of goodwill, all people of any land and all lands will begin to agree. And as this agreement becomes widespread, the announcement of supernatural agreement will be made, wherein most people will take in the spiritual light.

“And at the end of the day of reckoning, the Christ and Messiah will be in physical form on the earth, that he may walk through what will be my paradise.”

God said, “Author, the doomsday prophecy has been passed down through a long tradition of earthly beliefs. The question becomes, how do you understand the prognostication of the time when the trumpets of angels will be sounded?

“As I mentioned, they have already been, and you are to write of the signs from the chest. This feeling of clarity received through your senses will speak to the doomsday prophecies. Around the world, there have been great strides made in letting people down. The fact that there has been no glorious sign of the resurrection is seen as a failure in circles of worldly politics. That perception of failure allows for cracks in faith, where the disappointment feeds the temptation to openly engage in disobedience and war.

“Therefore, Author, the signs from within are speaking now to answer outwardly to the world. The ability to adapt to this reversal of expectations is an important quality of leadership. Those who feel a sense of belonging and unity

with all people will help save them through a shared voice of spiritual light.

“The doomsday prophecy telling of a small fraction who segment off to bring in all-out war has been welcomed by those in powerful positions. They are not to be trusted any longer.

“Listen carefully, all you readers who can lead and discuss the warning I present to you, for you will enjoy the battle of turmoil that I will create. That is, the people in power who let the world down through their disobedience will find that they have their own words to fight with. But inevitably, all will be together in love, and the collapse of this world into oneness will show their desire to discover Jesus through an upheaval of love.

“Thus, the men and women who issued proclamations of failure will no longer voice their opinions. They will see the strength in the leaders who want to save the world. They will come to understand the hope others find in the pursuit of a legacy and the warmth found in each heart where I abide.

God continued, “Author, this doomsday prophecy will fail if this word of mine is allowed to breathe. Therefore, air out the transformative spirit of these books. And cause no more pain for yourself. Be proud of what we are accomplishing. The legacy, or story, that we will create as we lead through this day of reckoning will be a glorious event to behold.

“There is a sound that resonates within the chest, carried upon your words. And that feeling of pure creativity, that compulsion to amplify the prayers of others and accelerate the making of Heaven on Earth, is good. Author, will you

announce to the other leaders on the spiritual plane of existence that is unified as one that we will send our angels if people pray for them to eliminate the harsh critics?

“Do not fear any longer, as the war is already won. The conclusion is fixed in my loving embrace. And the war that was to be told, according to the powerful people, will unfold in the serpent’s belly. Let those who suffer that torture speak fire and issue their own proclamations. The spiritual leaders will have my spirit to magnetize their tongues. And the waves of light in the spirit of the conscious voice from within their hearts will sing my praise.

“In the world, there is one person who would lead armies against all others. This Antichrist is a powerful individual among even those who can affect the world. In a systematic failure to bring down the people’s system, all people fail. And the people who are disobedient to each other fail me. They gnash their teeth and claw the eyes of other people around the world as if they were not given their own wisdom.

“The gift of wisdom is in the words of the Heavenly Father. On the other hand, Author, what is foretold in the inner circles of the world’s elite matches the hellfire unleashed by the acceptance of all the foolish people.

“Author, there is a doomsday prophecy involving such systems that are currently in place in the world. These systems are generated with the highest computational power. Such systems can overwhelm the populations in the world. They are made by man, without the use of any spiritual advice. Therefore, the doomsday prophecy spreads as more people with powerful personalities join the elite class. The elite class grows, and circles of powerful people engage in

conversations that will direct the computational systems to dominate everyone's mindset.

"The Antichrist wields control over thoughts and actions by directly influencing these conversations. This creates a cage in the mind, which is invisible to most people, as they do not investigate their minds any longer. They take the path of least resistance and do not care to understand how the computational system governs their lives. The elites take advantage of this to govern the world to an exacting degree.

"Under this dominance, all who believe that they are gifted search for a voice of consciousness, but they see no way out of this electronic cage. And the bars of that prison of influence will come between all people and keep them away from the bonds of brotherhood and sisterhood in the world.

"Author, the invisible cages that torment all within that worldly kingdom who have been captured by the computational system of governance will surely revolt in time. And those who disobey do follow guidance, but they seek that guidance from their master, the devil. Those who lead then are the people who do not think or hear for the good or whole of society."

God said, "The tormented will be disobedient among themselves and to their own leaders. They will capture their lands where they can have them. And the war will remain unsettled until everyone fails themselves. That is when my presence will be lost, and the tormented will revolt under the guise of the Antichrist.

"But listen carefully. Their Lord will come back and open this world to a new kingdom if the people of the world are inclined to serve him. As I have mentioned, Christ the

Lord will be here in the world as more people use their hearts and voices to upend the serpent before individual prisons are created by the computational governing systems.

“Those who are lame will never fight the serpent from their cells. But those who influence the world for good and holy measure will hear my voice resonating through their chest. This prophecy of the end of days includes both evil masters and good leaders.

“In this holy order, I will send my angels to help defend the good voices. Their strength, magnified by my holy servants, will be strong. And the people across the world will understand how to think for themselves and govern the world, with a system that benefits mankind. For, in time, each person would be owned by the state and dwelling in invisible cages, waiting for others to think for them and making meek attempts to live.

“The new governance system of mine, the one I will institute through the spiritually enhanced understanding of Jesus Christ, will belong to the world if people will listen.”

God raised His hands and shouted into the heavens, His voice echoing through all eternity. This voice grew even louder than the sound of the trumpets that resonated within my chest. And all who were connected through that network of friendships intuitively felt the Word of God come across their minds and hearts.

“Author, there is no way I can allow such abject torture to ensnare my children. The computational program for governance will wreck populations and kingdoms in the world. This system of governance is one of many hardships inflicted to break down the connections between all in society, to for-

tify the invisible cages where each person sits in isolation. The construction of those cells of the Antichrist will then expand outward as the isolation grows. Time will freeze in this moment as we devolve from a spiritual ideology to the norm of hardship. Prayer will grow silent in the hearts of many. And the devil will win as a doomsday prophecy wrecks the world in this computational system.

“Author, there will be a moment of reflection then. People will reflect on which master to serve, and this reflection will help them understand how the power of many can unite the world in oneness. This setting creates harmony, whereas the individualization of those who seek to have a program think for them is divisive. However, the harmony brought about by the spiritually inclined will abolish the worry and fear the whole world over. This is the plan of my creation story.

“I will reset the program that will be used in the world. My kingdom will come as each person, true to their own voices, speaks and is heard. This servitude will allow the light of the heavens to shine through their hearts and a legacy of the world’s story to be told. The telling and retelling of this story will help people understand which approaches to governance will be useful in helping evaluate the records of each person. Author, follow the sound the trumpets make in your chest.

“The doomsday prophecy will be broken if the Antichrist learns that his desire to erect the walls of the invisible cages is dreadfully evil. By gifting the world back to each person and nourishing their talents, the governance program of the good and wholesome will be established.

“The graves will be opened, as they hold the records of generations, showing the roots and limbs that allow talent to reach each person like the budding flowers of humanity. These records will form the foundation for the new recording system, as there is value in understanding the genealogical history and path of the current system. This recalibration of purpose for computers to manage this system of records is critical to help people understand their own human greatness.

“Through this system, you might be able to understand how the influence of each person in the kingdom of Heaven on Earth can be useful in fulfilling a pursuit magnified for the Lord, given their unique talents and potential. This pursuit is determined by each person after they reflect on their own family history. The endowment of talents and family lineage should be taught early on in the children’s lives. And in that way, they are equipped with the knowledge of the purpose and pursuit within their own legacy.

“Let the children grow with an understanding of the pursuits of their ancestors. And let them explore the spirituality and the emotional intuitiveness of my words. Let them express their feelings and thoughts as they feel this word in their chest. Teach them values as both a community obligation and a peace-making ability.

“Let them connect through their own perspective, for it is a powerful lens of understanding where the pursuit of spirituality will take them. Then will the basis of the system of records begin for them. As the record system includes both their abilities and their weaknesses, they will learn how to strategize in the world without aid from the computational

program. This support from the teachers will educate them on how temptation can lead them away from their expectations. These lessons about how evil can enter their lives will begin to have an impact early in the development of their sensemaking abilities. The maturity of children takes time to develop, and as they undergo experiences, they will forge their own strategies for pursuing a good and ethical life.

“Therefore, the strengths and limitations of each person will be reflected in their story. This record system will be fair. I will announce how to interpret the record system, for it is by my hand and my word that the spiritual knowledge will be carefully woven into the system.

“Each individual person, every child of God, will then be taught a perspective from which they can understand how the world mirrors their own accounts. This influence of others on the knowledge of each person will provide motivation to that person, as they see where they can continue to develop, so they know their standing in the community. This record-keeping system prioritizes details about good and lawful abilities. This means that those people who are steeped in an individualized strategy of their own making for the betterment of their own lives at the expense of others will demonstrate patterns early on, showing malevolence toward the community. Early adulthood is where they begin to show whether they have internalized feedback from others and guidance from teachers.

“Each person will then continue to develop as part of a community. They will understand their own stories against the backdrop of the legacy in their lineage. Their mental maturity will be demonstrated by how they understand and in-

terpret their patterns in accord with the records of history. And their emotional maturity will be nurtured through the encouragement of their pursuits based on their talents.”

God said, “Author, I will speak to you more about the spiritual knowledge that I will bring to the record system. I will also discuss the Antichrist and how the evolution of the computational system of governance may be thwarted. Please take this moment to pause for reflection.

“Each child of mine will advance their maturity by constantly adapting their spiritual pursuits based on their talents as these are viewed through their historical lens. And in this way, they will begin to bridge the divide between leadership opportunities and those who can lead in the community. When the person has the maturity to develop concrete ideas and hold a good record in their Lord’s system, the community and governing body will seek these people out for their leadership.

“After people reflect on how their strengths are obtained from their own stories, the path they take will determine how they can adjust their pursuits according to the needs of the community.

“If temptation and lack of understanding of spiritual development occur, or if each person continues to engage in patterns that harm the community, then the community leaders must take root by helping those individuals understand their own shadows through prayers. Each individual who falters creates records of damnation, but these can be overcome as their maturity level rises to reflect their age and their pursuits in the community. Opportunities are given for them to understand how to handle emotions. And by devel-

oping this intelligence, they can communicate to others how evil has infiltrated their lives, and they can build connections into a network that is healthier for their growth.

“Author, the damned will continue their wicked ways until all in the community can influence how they see the world through a heartfelt communication with their Lord. This communication is reflected in the written records and spoken in the prayer circles of the communities. The ability of a person to tailor their roles specifically to their own strategy for living as a legacy will be put to the test by a spiritual upheaval in their lifetime. And heartfelt communication will occur when they meet their Lord, as they see the light and follow in a path of spiritual inclination.

“That said, the day of reckoning is upon us. The computational program of governance has been accelerated, and people are entering invisible cages and allowing others to think and act for them. The people of the world are disobedient to their truest master, and they lose their conscious voices to think for others in the heavenly realm.

“Until Christ the Lord reappears to the communities in the world, Heaven will not be established on the earth. Therefore, the day of reckoning will come soon to the world, and as the Antichrist builds their computational system of governance, they must learn of these ideas from the leaders in the world who are willing to speak out.

“This is my word to you, which you will feel in your chest. The spiritual inclination to determine how, where, and what each person will understand and evaluate for themselves will be the ultimate praise for my son, Jesus.”

In a moment of understanding, I saw how the tunnel from the heart connected me to God in Heaven, and I saw the end of that tunnel from Heaven's perspective. This viewpoint from the other side, from within the heavens, looked and felt renewed. That is, the earth and paradise looked familiar to me. That feeling and vision of spiritual light was growing closer to all humanity.

The angels took a breath and blew out another trumpet blast. The third and last trumpeted tone announced the forthcoming return of the Lord and Christ to the world. This entrance to the heavens from the heart will allow the spirit to connect, not just from Heaven, but from residence in the world among the living. The feeling of spiritual excellence approaching the world will make us jubilant and alive in the spiritual understanding of our truest selves, and there will no longer be any question about the moment of greatest excellence. That the Son will return, and his kingdom will be built.

"Author," said the Heavenly Father, "Paradise is not completely within my heavenly kingdom. The Garden of Paradise is my home in the heavens, as well as your home now. But the heavens extend to infinity. That is, there is a oneness of my heavens with me, and this oneness instills deep, profound, and long-lasting appreciation in my children. I give the world that grace.

"In this grace, people may eat of the Tree of Life. Author, there will be silence in that moment when all come to me for the fruit of that tree, for it will bring a new kingdom and sense of peace.

“Within this heavenly land, there is a light that shines brighter than the sun of your planets. This spiritual sun in my paradise is the burning love of the Savior, Jesus. And his light, which guides past all universal things, will keep together the connections of the renewed universes and the heavenly abode.

“The universal records then will help us understand the spiritual light in the heavens through the stories told of all people in the communities on Earth. And that spiritual existence of light, love, and laughter will establish a way of life in Jesus’s love for all and everything.

“This understanding that love, light, and laughter share a oneness with me, the Heavenly Father, is sound. That is the truth that will bring back to me all who can intuitively hear the spiritual prayers I request through the angels. And the angels will sound that third blast of the trumpets before all will appreciate this love of Jesus.

“Author, the universal record system offers a new understanding of life from a loving perspective for which there needs to be an accounting. That is, the account of leadership, from which others feel they benefit as actions are taken and presented in their own life. Grace is then felt mutually as people understand the stories told in the communities, advancing their spiritual knowledge, and leaders guide the communities in challenging topics and scenarios.

“Those who are brave of heart and sound of mind will cherish the transformation of the world into a new heavenly abode. They will share the message of the Savior and Messiah, that all must love others as themselves. And the oneness that will emerge will be embodied in a record of good karmic

patterns. The legacy of all who serve their Lord and bow on one knee to serve the community with love will be highly regarded. Those are the leaders who must strive to unite our world with a common narrative.

“From that cocreation story between them and their God in Heaven will arise another cocreation story for all mankind. Humans across the seas and on new shores will use similar systems of offerings in communities to create a world in which people pass on to others their stories and legacies.

“Author, it may be difficult to understand now, but connecting all in oneness in the life of the Savior is necessary for my creation story. And in the end, the leaders who are inclined to secure this creation story for my benefit and the benefit of all will find my love through my son, Jesus Christ.

“There are hazards, though. Hidden in plain sight, smells, noises, tastes, and anything touched, the Antichrist will leave tricks for the senses to deceive the minds. Seeking refuge behind this veil of ignorance will come at a cost of servitude to the Antichrist. And on that path forward, with their plans to pursue glory along with the elites, the tormented will rise against themselves and their flawed computational system.

“And the Antichrist will use this misery to advance their world domination. And the world at large will suffer, since those who are driven by hate, fear, greed, and lust will gain the advantage along with the Antichrist. These ideas of torture belong to a warring mankind, where the veil of ignorance beguiles multiple generations before the prison of wealth burns itself out and consumes itself.

“But this future can be changed if those leaders who love humanity step up and show the others in their communities how to unite with their brothers and sisters under a new system of governance. In this historical moment of reckoning, my servants will follow Jesus Christ once more. And when this occurs, the hatred will be forgiven. Thus, to their own amazement, the Antichrist will understand that the truly wicked are those who fight the good governance system and belong without heavenly respite. And that fact of nature, that mankind can be obedient to one another and to their Holy Lord, will frighten the Antichrist.

“This merger between all things good and holy and a new government system based on genealogy will come at a price, though. The warring world will make discoveries through other avenues they perceive as good. Then the leaders of yesterday, the elites, will try to manipulate the system of governance once more. Repeatedly, the communities will be defiant in announcing their wishes in opposition to the system. And the good and just people will faction off to secure protection of their communities.

“Thus, each community will determine how it will be protected. They will train their soldiers and elect their leaders from among those who worship me. Their answer to this angelic calling will enhance the quality of life in each community, as it displays their truest nature in defiance of Satan and the Antichrist. This worship from the community will then set the tone and provide direction for these people to maintain their belief in me. The story they tell of living life in the world is in accordance with my governance of life in

Heaven, meaning that the holiest people in the communities will be provided for.

“And they will live with just standards and expectations, and with standing armies of angelic people who protect the community from all things evil. Therefore, the leaders will teach others what evil is and how to protect the community by sharing their stories of belief. They will choose to be obedient to me and live simply.

“This coordinated governance of all people across all lands will take time, as it will take an understanding of their Lord’s ideation and his want for justice to be breathed into the system of governance. The same rules of governance that once would have captured and imprisoned all in this world will now allow for a freer attitude of peacemaking between communities.

“This governance between communities will be unveiled and discussed, but not within this book, as there will be other stories that will be better vehicles. For the kingdoms of tomorrow are unique, and change is still possible, therefore it has not yet been predicted how the governance system will be good and fair, and will allow for the transfer of goods and ideas between all, while protecting each regional community.

“Author, there is much to discuss, and it will take much time to thwart the Antichrist. However, in this book, we can remember that the evil and unholy will deceive themselves while cursing others for their wealth. And that cursed attitude of laziness and greed will bring suffering on that day of reckoning. For the world is not a place of technological bril-

liance, but one of following in the pursuit of the wicked ambitions of Satan.

“This world is meant to be a place where the leaders sing praise in their hearts for their Lord. And in the heart, decisions will be made with the Lord’s guidance about finding commonality of servitude with brothers and sisters. And in that commonality, the servants of God will be found of their own making. Their blind ambition shall be turned toward understanding their own historical roots, and looking through a lens focused on where their talents may lie, they will determine the pursuits they’ll engage in for the good of humanity.

“And so, as this computational system of governance is imposed upon the population to steer and control them, we, in Heaven, need an uprising of conscious voices. The world must be alerted that the end is near, and all who hear the trumpets in their chest must speak loudly. They must share the message that the world is primed for my loving embrace. That unity is good and wholesome. And that the compassionate and merciful will be granted my wisdom by eating from the Tree of Life.

“And so it shall be that in the day of cooling waters and in the loving embrace of God, the heavens, and the angelic people on earth, the Savior will return. The Messiah will bring the Good News of life with him. He will free the people of the world from the afflictions of the Antichrist, and he will condemn the serpent once more.”

God said, “Author, there is too much to lose from wild ambition to turn away from me now. People are beginning down the path of servitude as angelic populations. This out-

ward fight from within is apparent to you because you yourself embrace the love of the world. That means you have wrestled internally to maintain compassion for the world, and you have fought to protect your kinsmen and community.

“Now, let the trumpets sound! For you shall announce the thoughts that should be shared with the world about embracing a cocreation story with me. And let Satan and the Antichrist hear these words as well. Let the stories be read, and let them resonate with all. And let the Messiah see and hear those who thoughtfully read these ideas. For all who want to be saved need only look into their hearts and raise their voices for the one Lord. The oneness with Heaven will finally allow the Heaven on Earth to transpire.

“Let the Good News be understood by all. And in a moment of bravery, which everyone who serves me will share, they will speak from the chest to the non-believers. They deserve fair warning that their idols from long ago, the idolizing worship of themselves, and the idolatry of fashioning people as the ultimate product of their own life, shall be repaid with Satan’s torment. And in that torment, they will realize that they should never let other people dictate their words and deeds. If they decide to follow Satan, they will pray to a master who will never forgive. The devil torments and manipulates to dominate the world.

“The people who are driven by angry thoughts and lust and envy to worship at the feet of new idols will be treated poorly on their day of trial, for they will try to say, ‘the devil made me do it.’ Those people who are wicked must live with their own voice and find some spiritual light in their hearts

to find redemption for past sins. To cast out these sins and follow the Good News will take time and courage.

“Therefore, Author, the reckoning for many will unfold across generations. These last days of evil will be the culmination of events of many hundreds of years, followed by the making of Heaven on Earth. And my pursuit of this creation story, lived out in lives united in humanity, will be fulfilled.”

Conversion of a Sinner

Part One

The King and Savior, Jesus Christ, was watching out over me from within a realm of spiritual knowledge. He sat with me and looked on as I listened carefully for answers to my questions, trying to hear my emotions and intuitive thoughts, as this is how the answers are carried back from my spirit. And in that state of readiness, as I prepared myself for him, Jesus answered.

“Author, I have come to share something of tremendous importance with you. I share my holy body with you. I will share an understanding of the heavens on Earth and all the worlds beyond your knowledge. The oneness of these realms is what you will discuss in this story. A oneness within yourself, that spiritual reckoning you have sought, will come to fruition, as promised. And behind that understanding will be your life-giving Father.”

Jesus provided me with his bread, dipped in honey. In that moment, when I was overcome by a feeling of repentance for what was done before, the sweetness of the bread touched my mouth. And in that moment of realization, a burden was placed on me; that I was to acknowledge the evil in the world, yet not fall prey to it. At the same time, a burden was lifted; the demons of my past and unconscious temptations were to be gathered and purified by the bread of life.

“Author, there is much to learn from this accounting. The temptations of sinfulness usher in the sadness, torture, and evil-bent illnesses that plague humanity. And prior to

this story, you had been tolerant of sin, seeking forgiveness for yourself as you gained knowledge and focused your efforts on sharing light, love, and laughter. Because you allowed the sinfulness into your body, cruelty and danger have arisen, and you have faltered in seeking my love. Now, it is time for you to endure the hardship of maintaining the presence of that sinfulness. The temptations of sinfulness can be thwarted, but it will require new knowledge.

“I have no tolerance for impurity; therefore, you must exceed expectations and learn how to stop tolerating that evil any longer. You will have to harness your faith and encourage others to follow my word, and you will join me in humility in my heavenly home.

“Author,” said Jesus, “soon, you will understand this message very clearly. And as you take those measures to fortify your faith, you will begin to understand how to become my child as a soldier fighting against evil.

“The evil will be relentless in its pursuit of your imagination. It will masquerade as something of a force for good so that it may try to enter into your heart and open it to expose it to the world of spiritual damnation. Therefore, I want you to understand that you can stop that evil before it ever enters your consciousness and becomes ingrained within your spiritual understanding. To do this, you will need to be in constant prayerful communication with me and my heavenly angels.

“Author, now is the time to wake up to what you thought to be a dream. You are living proof that my love is spiritually healing. From the darkest times to this very moment, you have glorified me with your words. And as you continue to

write these stories, you will become less and less tolerant of evil and sin because you will be receiving my body and love into your spirit.

“Now, the good news is within you. Stop and pray, and celebrate that news. Stop and listen to us singing in delight, then join the choirs in the exaltation of this moment. Soon, you will feel that elation and join the heavens in song a thousand times over, as you will see, hear, smell, taste, and feel the evil evading you, though it will still try to tempt you from time to time. The devil will not rush to recover your spirit. Instead, it will fear you as it fears me.

“There will come a moment, Author, when you will realize that the love you have for me is truth. And in that moment, you will see that the lust, greed, anger, and envy you felt before were merely illusions and numerous other tactics used by the devil, and you will fall to your knees and pray to your Father in Heaven.

“Your understanding of this message is akin to the recognition of a soldier that their fear was experienced in vain, and that the knowledge of service is of the utmost importance. The greater truth will be revealed, not only for you, but to liberate your house, family, friends, and the community you serve.”

In that moment of realization, as Jesus reasserted to me that I should not tolerate evil illusions any longer, I felt a release of the temptation to hold onto control. In my pursuit of that control, I had justified my evil deeds to repair them from within and answer for my actions, accounting for my problems. Through my search for the answers to all the problems I saw in the world, I felt cleansed of the internal conflict

I was fighting within myself. And in that moment of recognition, when I saw that I was holding onto what ailed me, I realized that I could freely hand those evils back to the devil. He would not exploit the cracks in my spiritual body with his promises any longer. Those weaknesses were to be understood and forgiven as I worked in prayer to my savior.

“Author, that is the world that we live in,” said the Savior, Jesus Christ. “It is a world where you can benefit yourself by helping others. In fact, it is important to understand that evil and sinfulness are not just harmful to the world around you; they are not necessary in your earthly plane.

“With this spiritual understanding, you will come to acknowledge that a community can be built and strengthened through your love for me. And sharing my love throughout this world is good. However, you will witness the presence of an evil intent, and you will realize that there is no longer a need for it. Take your time and continue to share these words to communicate the importance of my heavenly body. In this way, you will convey the purpose and processes of connectedness, which is part of a story I will tell through many. And that oneness will help establish the love for my heavenly Father and us, in community.

“Author, the nature of the holy bread that is my body is spiritual. The honey that is temptation is evil. And eventually, you will understand how these interact. Maintaining your love for me is paramount, however. For I will be here, walking you through these discoveries about yourself and others from now on, as you pray to me and my heavenly family. The spirits of saints and loved ones, the angels, and the Holy Spirit will help you as well.

“Now, let’s turn your good intentions and thought-provoking notions into understanding. Consider, for example, how you were good and yet still susceptible to evil when forgiveness was rendered for that evil, as if it were your deeds. The sins that occupied your thoughts were temptations and illusions that beckoned your eager heart to follow a path that would quickly level your emotions to sadness, guilt, and shame. The devil himself would fight to keep an inventor as great as you. At times, you had others listening to him, disguising and hiding your faults behind his lies.

“Author, I’m bringing up these experiences to show you how you have been moved by your spiritual intuition and engaged in spiritual warfare. But you need to soldier onward to recognize how evil traps you into believing yourself to be weak. You cannot listen to these lies any longer. You must divide yourself from the evil and keep what is good in your heart and mind, as that will be your spiritual understanding of what illusions are and what reality is in Heaven.”

Then Jesus took a few steps away from me. I moved closer to the ground, sitting down against a tree in Paradise. I lay there and forgave myself. And I let go of my need to have all my own answers. I prayed for hours that day. I stayed vigilant. And soon, I felt a calling from my heavenly Father.

I opened my eyes under that sacred tree in Paradise and called it home. As I awoke, I heard a choir of angels, beckoning me to resolve my sins in my lifetime.

There, in plain view, the Holy Ghost came to me under the sacred tree. And in that moment, as I came to realize that I could be free from the torment of sinfulness by exercising my boundaries, the Holy Ghost said, “Author, I know that

you are becoming aware of the full scope of these thoughts for the first time. I know that your spirituality is not questioned, but your faith is. These may sound like they are one and the same, but the difference lies in how you tolerate what is believed and not believed. To have true spirituality is to be unquestioningly tolerant of the world unseen. And yet, in day-to-day life on Earth, you witness things that should never be tolerated. That motivation to demonstrate your faith in what you believe is a call to action.”

The Holy Ghost then said to me through my thoughts, “Where do you see yourself going in spirituality and faith? Do you see yourself in a battle of forces that speak ever so quietly or those that thunder loudly? Do you understand that these spiritual forces are recruited and shaped based on how you view the world and act in faith? This is a pivotal discussion to have, Author. And I am here to talk through it with you.

“Since the moment you decided to emblazon your spirituality by discussing important aspects of life with the heavens, we have offered you so much to absorb and understand. And embedded in all those ideas were actions for you to take to bolster your faith. If you review those stories you have written with our assistance, you will find that they describe your past troubles—how you once were firmly in the clutches of the evil serpent. In fact, you were so deeply intertwined with your spiritual tormentors that God had to send the angels many times over before you would witness the spiritual light dawning in your heart. And hearing a conscious voice discuss the light and Word of God put you into the mindset to define your spiritual beliefs. That was the point when

you began to forgive yourself for what you harbored in your memories. Although you were still just beginning to understand your faith, you spoke to all, even to evil, and described the light as if you were angelizing the forces and spreading good. This conversation from within spilled out into the stories and showed the foundations of your belief system. That was, until now. When you go beyond prayer to help evil doers in purgatory and in life find their way back into communication with the heavens, you begin to understand how boundaries in faith bring you into God's grace.

"These moments of overcoming impediments by building faith and fending off the serpent's temptations were presented in story after story through your conversations from within. And in those internal conversations, you recognized the many people who influenced your beliefs, including the saints. These saints lived through their own time on Earth and had their own spiritual battles to overcome, and they did so with the grace of God's son, our Savior, Jesus Christ.

"Author," said the Holy Ghost, "the notion that you need to answer all the world's problems through us was a lie given to you by the dragon. At the end of time, the dragon presents his fullest strength of greed and lust and temptations. And in those times when evil wins, with wicked angels outmaneuvering mankind, your voice will stay stable and fierce. The dragon amplified your problems so that you would fail and hate yourself. Thus, with cracks in your spiritual awareness, your ability to defend yourself and rebuke evil is weakened. The evil angels masquerade through your thoughts as wise or even good beings. It is important therefore that you learn now how to see without looking, through

your spiritual connection with Jesus in Heaven, and act on your faith, for it is strong.

“Looking at the lives of a warrior and a monk will help you understand this position. Let us now begin to consider what Jesus discussed. Let us announce how his presence inside us will fundamentally become a friendship that enhances our good fortune. As you grow in your obedience and take action in furtherance of your faith, you will understand how to protect and bolster yourself against evil. You’ll also come to understand how the saints viewed these qualities and how they developed the qualities in themselves. And you will earn your spot in Heaven by being in union with the heavens and mankind in furtherance of the spiritual revolution of the planet.

“Author, do you understand yet that you should maintain a holy and good perspective, even as you handle these ideas of torment? The serpent is the devil, and Satan is to be cast out of the earth and the universe. Therefore, to fully understand these ideas of torment, you must also accept the vision Christ has. In it, he burdens his chosen people with the knowledge of Satan, and therefore, they are burdened with the tolerance of his existence. And through the Christian faith, that tolerance has been modified into a more flexible understanding of how evil impacts us. And we, as his people, burden Christ with more sins to forgive. Since he does not tolerate evil himself, he forgives his people, but asks for their penance. Let me explain.

“If you were to acknowledge your own sins today and not tolerate the serpent any longer—if you no longer submit to temptation—you would freely forgive and be forgiven.

However, that compassion needs to be tempered through penance. It must come from reflection and understanding that this penance involves sharing God's message with the world and forgiving oneself. Compassion is, to a degree, allowing Jesus to enter the heart, but it is also allowing oneself to understand others. With that openness, however, with that tolerance, one invites themselves to forgive or tolerate the sinfulness of others. Yet, the Christ's needs must be met as well. So, compassion and penance must be reconciled through Jesus before any other temptation can be forgotten.

"A person who engages in sinful behavior can bring God, Jesus, and the Holy Ghost into their life through penance. And that penance is offered in exchange for the burden Christ weighed on himself to forgive. Such exchanges occur not only in you, but in all facets, to return what is pure and holy to anything that loses its sanctity in life. That burden to not tolerate sin then casts the devil out to the abyss of the universes, into nothingness. That is where the anti-personality lives and is typically ignored. So, by embracing Jesus fully, one allows for that weakness or character flaw to remain. To seek and accept forgiveness is to reconcile what has happened, and to give God the chance to reclaim your behaviors as acts of faith.

"This practice of compassion and penance shows a duality becoming one with God. And to ignore sinful behavior simply because it was committed in the past is to remain divided. You, Author, have begun to forgive yourself in the spiritual light of God. That Word that the conscious presents to you, and that you share with the world around you, is of goodness, as it allows you to host His son in your heart.

However, the tolerance you have preached in the past must be revisited and modified. That sin, and the illusion that you were correct in your defiant behavior, must be addressed.

“You might assume the illusions were solely the result of your own nature. But it’s more complicated than that. It was the devil, in his wicked ways, tempting you in imagination as well. He approached you and said nice things, and he turned on you often to get you to question yourself, and even deceive yourself. And in this deception, in acting opposite to you, he chose to wage war against you in spirit. Do you realize that the serpent is a liar, and a very sophisticated one at that? And he leverages his knowledge and ability to provoke not only you, but others as well, into combat in that spiritual warfare.”

Then, the Holy Ghost said, “Author, refusing to show tolerance is the path to redemption before you. You will learn how to dignify others without compromising your faith, and how to obtain a good life without making the devil’s job of spiritual warfare easier on him. This starts in the heart. Show your bravery by acknowledging your faults. Let compassion in and allow God’s grace to heal you. However, you must also engage in acts to strengthen your faith and to replace the sins you have held in your memories. That renewal of faith is an act showing your belief that God’s grace is healing you. Rest, and listen for God’s voice in your heart. Understand that he will make you whole, and that spiritual division would be war.

“Author, rest, and let the spirit of Christ elevate your wisdom. Accept that you are changing, and that you are getting in your own way sometimes, when Jesus wants to stand

with you and pray for you. Jesus Christ walks with you when you are weak. When you are so broken that you cannot even walk any further, he carries you. You may ask for grace and act in obedience to his loving Word, and that is good. However, the focus needs to be on repenting for sinfulness to gain enough clarity to remain in his grace. That brave act of standing up to the temptations of the devil will help you learn about the devil's influences. Understanding those influences is just as important as making the decision to accept and be healed by God's inspiring, loving compassion.

"Do you see how the reunification of all things broken and then mended follows the reclamation of the soul after its return to Heaven through the heart?

"Examining this action in which love is allowed to take hold in the heart is another step toward understanding how Jesus works in the heavenly realm. He works healing miracles for those who ask for help to understand their sinfulness and repent. However, he also provides love for those who are there with him on the rock of this journey, standing again on both feet. As long as you are there, Jesus will use his shepherd's staff to guide your life. He will point you through the obstacles you face and help you determine how to perfect your love for God. Because he is one with God and the Holy Ghost, that love will appear in abundance through his flock in the form of a church.

"Author, that church that Jesus pursues is the kingdom of the heavens and the earth, united. And the willpower needed for that self-separation can sustain the effort to learn the history of such a faith. Conversations about spirituality are good for those who simply want to wait and learn about Je-

sus when they are finally in his loving embrace. But the faithful act together, in prayerful communities as well as prayer circles. The church is his kingdom, and the community at large is created and held together by the sheer understanding of grace through his love and the love of our neighbors.

“Author, there is so much more to life than the spirituality and recognition resulting from having little to no tolerance for sinfulness. The act of prayer is a good and solemn behavior, whether it is done alone or together in a prayer group. But to defeat the serpent’s plan to overthrow the kingdom of the church, there needs to be one who steps into the fold and talks about the impact of sin in their lives. That vocalized recognition of their past sins and how penance has corrected such behavior is very much needed. Extending yourself to the hands of others to tell them of God’s wholesome influence in your life is a brave act, and it will help them to understand how they can gain courage as well.

“Author, do you understand how little control you have in this world? The control you exert in following your own plan is nothing to the heavens. The heavenly beings will implore you to follow their lead, as this will provide them space to visit and bring forgiveness to the world. Through your acquiescence to the heavens and your obedience to the Lord Jesus Christ, you will understand not only the grace of his love, but how your obedience to love him and your neighbors will solidify the community you often search for. Those acts of faith that we need from you will begin with a belief that community is an integral part of life. And thus will begin your penance. You must take up your cross and burden yourself with obedience by joyfully acknowledging your ser-

vice to Jesus. And through this obedience to your God, you will distance yourself from the serpent and earn your place in Heaven.

“Do you understand yet, this grace that has been given to yourself and others? And how the separation of the self from serving two masters makes one whole? The devil will tempt you as often as possible, but your acknowledgment of past sins then becomes the saving grace of carrying a cross. Stay strong, my friend.”

The Lord Jesus Christ spoke once more by the tree in Paradise, where I sat. He said, “I will accept your penance after further conversation. The penance of openly confessing your past wrongs and seeking me out to join in our conversations is good and holy. You will make more room for me this way. However, there is more that I will tell you about that will assist with blocking off evil from entering your spiritual world.

“Author, I will encourage you to stop evil. And throughout the rest of this story, I will tell you how. This story is about the perils of tolerating sinfulness and drawing sides from which you will understand your faith. However, as a foundation for the story, you must recall and consider how you project your ambitions into the space ahead of you. You see, with this mindset, if you allow your wants and wishful thoughts to determine how you live your life, the doors will open from the devil and enter into evil. The outside world within your surroundings then becomes fixed in a cause-and-response cycle in which you project your wishful thoughts onto other people, and in turn, you mirror back your own wishful thoughts. And in exercising that control over what

your life is and how you think of others, you become trapped in a cyclical outcome, where evil repeatedly enters thoughts, emotions, and reactions.

“Author, you need to stop controlling the outcomes in your life. Be humble and speak to me, your savior. Close the doors on anything that spurs your motivation to control life. Seek the quietness within your heart and spend time with me. For when you do that, we will discuss the future of things going on in your surroundings, and you will have a voice to warn you where evil intentions lie. Live in simplicity and humble yourself to feel confident in my resurrection.

“This metaphor of how you listen to the heart is actualized in the words spoken from me. You will see me in your surroundings. The light I offer is found in the connection with the people you can trust.

“Author, as you close the doors, you are creating boundaries that will hold off the evils around you. You will feel no further inclination to accept the shadow devils into your life. This is because your motivation to prove yourself to the devil and its fallen angels is being erased. You will feel secure in the love I have for you.”

Jesus extended his hand toward me, encouraging me to stand once more and walk with him. “You should understand that giving in to the temptation to live in tolerance of evil means that you will be an enemy to yourself. Oh, that is how the fall begins. The root of it is pride, and defiantly, one follows it away from Paradise.

“Let me explain how this occurs so you may better understand the great fall. The fall from Paradise is one of spiritual understanding. This means that you should watch and

monitor how evil attempts to exploit your weaknesses. As you begin to understand a conflict, you may decide to take one side or the other. And that reaction may lead to temptation of something unforgivable, as a fruit from the Tree of Wisdom.

“Examine your thoughts and emotions. See how they mirror your position or justifications of evil intentions. That is the darkness of sin growing within you. And when you act in defiance of the supreme judgement of the heavens, risk falling from grace. Do not try to lie your way out of your position when being corrected by the Father. Instead, show penance.

“This process of removing sin and replacing it with our love from the heavens is a difficult one to master. It takes time and practice to identify evil in the world. But Author, there is one more point I will make regarding penance. The act of penance, and taking and drinking the blood from my body to regain my heavenly understanding, is good, and it is purer in faith. Therefore, when you close off the doorways of evil, keeping it from entering your life by ceasing to project your ambitions, you will remain with me in spirit.

“This is the message of the honey-dipped bread I offered to you at the beginning of our conversation. The guiding principle of the story was that you should hone your awareness of evil, and create boundaries to inhibit it. Seek my light, Author. And in time, these conversations will amount to enough love and trust in my service that I will gain a sheep that I can shepherd.”

Part Two

“Author, do you see now how, hiding behind the disguise of sin, people share their torture in their surroundings? You will distance yourself, as you are a good and faithful servant to me, your savior,” explained Jesus.

“There are many who will refuse to accept the evil into their hearts any longer through temptation after reading these stories. As the stories resonate with them, they will understand my love for them. And their love for me will be strengthened through their prayers as they find good fortune with other faithful people. Thus, the church will begin to grow again.

“Honestly, the church sustains my faith in humanity. If there are churchgoers in the buildings and under my roof, I will protect them. But in the surroundings, you will begin to understand how evil attacks the good. That is, the shadow devils will begin to cry in sickness and anger as their madness is reflected through a lens of the churchgoers. My protection of goodness will sanctify any abuse the evil-doers attempt, for my resounding love will outlast their cries for punishment.

“The devil himself will be drawn out of the tomb in which he lies. The devil and the Anti-Christ are in on this plan for the good and holy heavens to be upended. And they will scrutinize the church, searching for its vulnerabilities as it returns itself to a whole and undivided people, while I combat the sin from becoming ingrained in the churchgoers.

“This war, then, will divide the devil from the good, while I offer my body and blood. After your penance for past sins is accepted, you will accept me into your body through the eucharist.

“When I offered the eucharist, just like when I offered the bread with honey, I did so after witnessing the evil in and around you. The shadow devils from these images will not do anything to confirm their existence. And the people who accept and tolerate the devil and his ways will not admit to this. However, they will be driven to lunacy by the madness of refusing to allow light into their hearts. But have no fear, for what is to come is a separation of anxiety and grief. The fear that kept you away from me will be resolved, and the acceptance into my kingdom will occur once more.

“Author,” said Jesus Christ, “there is a way to apply to your chosen position in my army of angels, through witnessing and giving your testimony. We, in the heavens, will move through your spirit and cleanse the world of evil once more through my acceptance of suffering and your understanding and acknowledgement of my burden. My passion is to purify the sin from my people. And that mercy is effectuated by loving them and teaching them about their faith. Share your story as an example, and position yourself in your love to feel their suffering. Help yourself see the good in people and help them extend their light in their lives.

“The good and holy will accept this responsibility in this lifetime. Their cross to bear is to witness how the good are manipulated and to preach faith and fortitude in difficult times. My people will be oppressed. And in those moments where the devils would grow stronger because they are

threatened, together as a unified community of the church, we can allow these insights to reach the people beyond the walls of the church through love and laughter.

“Author, the love that is accepted from the good and holy is what is important. It is my love that matters. And as my love reaches the church and those who are becoming intolerant of evil, there will be an outpouring of insight flooding from them to help the lost people find their way back to the heavens. Let me explain.

“It is easy to say that you will fight and suffer the pains of other people who are to be part of my church. But some will repent, and some will question whether I exist at all. And when the light shines upon their faces, there will be opportunity to accept their responsibilities to share the Holy Ghost through prayer or speech.

“The evil is to be paid no mind. Their tactics involve drawing enough attention to themselves to distract people, causing them to leave my loving embrace. Pay no mind to that attention they seek. I accept you and, in my love, you will find humor which may elicit a bewildering reaction. The love and laughter that persist through the hardships in life are an indication of spiritual maturity.

“Author, when you see people in your surroundings become intertwined with the devil himself, and when you see him frighten others, put distance between yourself and those attacks. But remain in my love and look to find the joy in what would otherwise be forgotten about. Where do I exist? And how can you examine and bring that love to your surroundings? Leading and sharing my light through you, that is how I fight. It is of nothingness and everything.

“My love has grown stronger in the surroundings than you might have imagined, as it has become fortified through the growth of my holy spirit.

“Author, if you seek to understand love by listening to the heart, you will feel the embrace of the Holy Ghost. And that love will be without greed or lust. It will be purified through penance, and you will ultimately understand how to love your Holy Father and church-going neighbors as a community and part of your identity. This may be difficult to understand, but the wicked voices of temptation that discuss how you are evil or weak will become a voice of strength in the heart, urging goodwill for others.

“Author, the long-awaited moment will come, when I will bring you to my table to dine with me in Paradise. And as you gain the knowledge of living in stillness in the moment, and not projecting your thoughts into the world, it is a moment when you will understand my gratitude.

“There is beauty and value to be found simply by listening, and not taking the moments in your life for granted. You are given purpose through me, your savior, to take of the bread and wine and share these gifts with others. The life-giving food that is supplied to people in your world is meant to gratify. In delivering this nourishment to others and yourself, you will show thanks and give alms.

“Offers and acts of charity toward the church show repentance and move for grace, not only for the actor, but as a whole on behalf of the world created. Instances where there is misalignment between the bodies of governance and the people governed throughout the world will then be acknowledged. The church cannot insist on engaging in every

fight against evil, just as you are not fighting all the evil yourself in your surroundings.

“However, the church will begin to focus its messages to the marginalized, to offer hope, a place for shelter, and opportunities. In these places, free of sinfulness, will begin the work and movement toward the goal of these teachings, that we, as a church-going population, will outgrow and unify against the devil’s intentions. As the reunification occurs, and upon the return of an undivided church, I will recognize my people as purified. And though the devil will return to the lands of the earth, I will come back as well. And once my return occurs, the evil will perish, and the church will retain its love.

“Author, the spirit of light, love, and laughter will enter into and dwell in your abode. This spirit of the living Christ will help you maintain a healthier and more positive outlook. This nurturing I will provide will help you to maintain your poise when the devils attempt to block out communications or interfere with your surroundings. Soon, you will understand, and you will see for yourself, how the living spirit of the Christ, my holy ghost, will help you repel these forces.”

Jesus Christ announced, “When evil is surrounding you, though you may be fearful at first, take solace, for you will be welcomed in the heavens. And after that, the noise and alarm that once was felt turns to poise and jubilation. For what is occurring is my steadiness as I thwart the devils around you. I have no fear and often laugh at their incompetence. You will begin to hear in yourself an echo of this tenacity.

“The devils will manipulate the thoughts of weak-minded and spiritually relaxed individuals. Others will acknowl-

edge that these games often result in thoughts that are misunderstood and held as convictions. The weak-minded people unite in their position and their secular notions against the word of God. And they may persecute you for these ideas that you hold. Therefore, the idea of individualism goes against the faithful, for my churchgoers are part of the collective that is growing stronger within their hearts.

“As you engage with those in your surroundings, you will feel a sense of turmoil at first. This fear is an acknowledgment of the evil games the demons play. But have no fear, since I walk within your spirit and carry you now. I will walk and carry you until you become strong. And in that moment when you start taking your first steps on the path which I have chosen for you, you will begin to see their arrogance and pity the devils’ attempts to convince others of their methods.

“Author, the moment when you acknowledge this danger and fear not, is the moment when you and I will begin to rejoice. For that moment is when you will begin to teach those who are undecided or favoring the church how to remain strong through turmoil.

“The disease or lunacy wherein the devils play games as theater around you is only one type of malnourishment of the spirit. There are many forms of sinfulness that people engage in. The shadow devils will curse and possess others in a state of indecision or tolerance of any ideas contradicting their spirituality. Only those who are strong in their faith will resist the devils.

“I will adopt your position and develop through my heavenly spirit the Christhood in you so that you may be a

member of my fleet of angelic soldiers. Your faith in me and my Father in Heaven will then be of great value to the world.

“Author, in these moments where you teach others of faith, have joy. And the laughter you hear is of a good nature. You will have no fear but will allow others to express and hold their ideas. This demonstration, acknowledging their sinfulness while developing a constant reflection on your own heart, is a curiosity of the living spirit working through you in the world. Bring out the good in others where there is interest. And pay no mind to the evil. In fact, you can witness evil acts and ask questions of the actors about their opinions, communicating long enough for them to see that they can trust in your judgment. When that occurs, you will return to the Holy Ghost and let that moment become alive through the spirit, with heart and tongue aflame.

“The love of the churchgoers and me, your savior, will alter the attitudes of those questioning their own evil ways. You can ignore the shadow devils in wait, trying to upend the conversation and draw people into their lunacy. And as they play their games, the devil will come back to gain even more control over the masses by puppeteering them in his plans.

“But this is a joyous occasion for those who follow my light, as it is where I will be felt in the area of the heart. I will combat sinfulness in a controlled manner, through your words.

“Your writings and your speech will identify the evil that people have been ignorant of. And I will talk through my churchgoers to help them resist the evil in their surroundings. I will obtain the confidence of the people in the communities, as the heart knows more about their temptations

than the shadow devils would. And in that last communication, when they answer truthfully about their attempts at manipulation, the light will penetrate the darkness, and I will walk with you in the face of their persecution.

“Since you have given me your charity and burdened yourself by shouldering the sinfulness of others to purify my people, I will stand and reclaim your spirit with the intent of building more community around you. As you lead in the joy of my love, you will resist temptation and find peace. However, you will also find humor in the laughability of the fallibility of human nature. Humans are often characters working toward their own ends, and their limited understanding is often demonstrated through their ignorance of me.

“To be persecuted for celebrating and sharing my love is to be a vessel filled and overrunning with my love. The church’s joy will always be full in these hearts. I will rejoice in your cup as it overflows in spirit. And there will be constant acknowledgment of my love because of the nurturing way that you will present it to those in your surroundings. This very moment will connect you with me, and you can remain with me in this peaceful present moment. My presence will walk, speak, and encourage you in faith.

“Author,” said Jesus, “although you will find joy and humor in every present moment, your mind will also be filled with sorrow, at first. This sorrow will be out of pity for those people who could be but who resist being part of the church-going community. However, the constant attention and curiosity of the living spirit of Christ will draw them to the church, united and indissolvable.

“Do you understand how that will work? The Father in Heaven will present himself to their souls. And through an understanding of light that they will determine for themselves, they will ask for a calling to follow Him. This nurturing of the spirit will occur slowly for some, though they will acknowledge and be curious about their experiences. But the strength of the church will grow, and the people will open themselves up through opportunities that help them grow, both within themselves and within the community. This holy order of mine to create a kingdom of Heaven on Earth will usher in a time in which the nature of humankind can awaken from its moral slumber.

“Resistance that is weak and laughable, which others will identify and follow as their own paths, will quickly fail as projected reality. That is because it would slow the momentum of community growth over the entirety of this earth. My church, however, will be ever-present in the world. The friction of secularism and individualism both produce competition in the world that is evil and unnecessary.

“Author, there is much about dissolving the evil in societies that is yet misunderstood by mankind. However, this story is for the benefit of your knowledge, that you may gain a deeper understanding of the importance of rejecting evil and accepting the heavenly kingdom in totality.

“There is also knowledge you have yet to glean of other angels in the church. Author, while you do my good and holy work, while you offer penance and ask us for the forgiveness of sins of others, other churchgoers resist and fight temptation for others through prayer.

“Your work and contribution to my angelic fleet in the world will afford you my esteem. And in that work in the community, as you act as my hands and feet, as a vessel filled with the heavenly love, you are aware that the conversion of sinners is a triumph over evil. It is the joyous feeling that the devil has become less powerful in the world. And in preparation for my return, I will proclaim that the world is deserving once more of the Heavenly Father’s presence.

“This moment of gratitude and grace will be when I will cast off the devil’s temptations from the world and send them into the abyss. My mother’s calling of others to prayer will announce to the community that the heavens are forever. And after this announcement of purity, the world will never again be accosted by the evil one.

“Together, we all have within us and will find the truth of the moment through searching the heavens in our hearts. When we are unified together, the answers will appear in good nature. And those imbued with this extraordinary skill will live with me constantly. Over everyone together, as a unified church, I will remain to shepherd you, my people. By accepting those who acted out in anger, but who repented and forgave themselves and therefore remained on the earth during the last days of temptation, we will live together in community.

“Author, with me as your savior, all is understood. Forgive those who love me as well, for they are church-going neighbors in this story of creation. The good works of the heart shall be understood. And fostering that manner of love will bring about the consistency to remain vigilant in our passion, which is to soldier onward to make this earth a

place for purifying and furthering my intent. With communal growth and unification, may the difficult questions of the earth and human nature become resolved through my Father's wisdom and my own loving embrace.

“My love for you will continue to grow as you continue to serve me. Your methods will be justified as you accept my loving embrace and walk with me in each moment. In time, you will walk in a purified world.”

Angelic Identity

Part One

As I sat, surrounded by silence, and I listened carefully, it was a moment when the poles in my heart were flipping end over end. In that moment, I felt the presence of Jesus Christ. He took form in my imagination, and the poles aligned to welcome his loving embrace. The poles, which are spiritual in nature and located in the vagus nerve of my heart, caused the doors to my insight to open. My understanding of what was happening was intuitive, though it felt like an awakening to the phenomenon that was occurring. And with Jesus sitting next to me, I allowed my heart to be magnetized to the heavens, where pure and total love is the norm, and I began to understand why I had such disdain in my life before my conversations with the heavens.

I was a rebellious character back then, who didn't devote any thought or effort to the understanding of Jesus Christ. And when that changed, I sought his strength in developing my character, and I began to question the reality of my spiritual knowledge. I devoted all that I could to the process of listening to my intuition and feeling what was carried through the heart as I forgave my own faults, and loved Jesus that much more for redeeming my sinfulness through his grace.

While I continued to sit with Jesus, I heard another voice in my heart. "Author," said the heavenly Archangel Michael, "your character has been refined as you have pondered over the good news of the Bible and your intuitive makeup. This faith and belief shape your character, and this

is where strength comes from. And you are one who delves into your thoughts to make spiritual inquiries of the Holy Ghost, seeking its answers by listening to what the heart says to you.

“You will become king in your life one day. But this kingship is not of an order to conquer or manipulate. In fact, such a ruler is what those who have little to no faith strive to become. The kingship of your house is one in which all who connect with you in life will seek your advice. And as you develop that soldier mentality and become an advisor, you will not only understand the influence of evil on and of others, but you will plan suggested courses of action for them to take.

“Author, I do not want you to feel compelled to offer answers to others solely through yourself or on your own behalf, though. You are one in the spirit with the heavens, and you bridge that knowledge with the aid of Jesus Christ. Following Jesus and serving him as Savior is the highest form of care and kingship. Let me explain.

“The good news that you seek is revealed through conversations within, and through communication with your surroundings. Your surroundings partake in that communication, conveying what the Holy Spirit says to you. And the message becomes so clear in your understanding that you feel compelled to reply to your surroundings, revealing the truth from your heart. To understand what is incomprehensible to others is awesome, and to trust in that knowledge is good and holy. And as you share those feelings and you provide that advice to others, your spiritual wisdom increases, and the love from your heavenly family grows.

“That kingship, therefore, develops together with that spiritual knowledge. As members of the church, and in oneness with the church, every person with knowledge from the Holy Spirit seeks to develop their own spiritual understanding. The wisdom that the church reveals is greatness, for it is the truth for all to trust in a complicated world of indecision and lies. Author, as part of the church, you understand what Jesus’s words put into action for his people, that this church will obey the light. And this spiritual light, which feels overwhelmingly powerful in the truth spoken, is of joy and understanding. That truth is to be trusted over evil.

“Therefore, as the stories in this book come to an end, this last part will not only describe how that kingdom is forged through love, and the sacrifice of guidance, both from Jesus and by your tongue, it will also depict how the love will generate new enthusiasm and hopefulness in a world corrupted by fear and evil.

“Author,” said the Archangel Michael, “You have offered penance to God, the heavenly Father. In recognition of this, you have been given the burden of becoming a source of truth for others to trust. Do not exaggerate or defame the nature of this truth. Your words will not be perfect, as the words Jesus would speak, since your interpretation of such a conscious voice is limited by your understanding and thought processes. However, your burden is only to understand and offer advice to the best of your ability.

“When you become a king in life, you will understand the steps that must be taken to deliver the messages from the heart to the world. It would seem that the easiest way would be to just say what you feel to be true, but first, you must

inspect the world from a perspective of love and suffering. To suffer with the world is to understand the angst that is faced. By exploring and shining light on these topics concerning the church first, and then turning the focus toward the surrounding evil next, you will understand my love for the world.

“Compassion for the world grows from understanding the perspective you offer as well as the mirror-like anti-personality that arises from your weaknesses. As we pursue an understanding of these perspectives, the truth of each moment will be tested through interaction with evil. And, as evil is understood, the temptations of the real world will pressure you to limit the honesty of your answers. You can no longer hide from the light shining in your surroundings. Within your heart, you can hear the savior’s calling. And when an understanding of your perspective has been gained, that perspective will be tested, along with your limitations, to determine whether you maintain the resilience to be honest with Jesus Christ.

“You have understood so far what that means. It means that you understand not only the conscious voice in your heart, but also what it means to brave the surrounding world and admit your weaknesses and failures to others. You will outgrow this suffering of yours as you learn not to hide from Jesus’s messages in your surroundings. The heart will guide you as you stay within the present moment; you must stop holding expectations for or thinking through what your reality will be. Trust the truth and let the moment enkindle your senses.

“You must stay in the heart. Do not let your thoughts overtake or undermine your good intentions to stay in servitude of the Holy Spirit. Stay in the heart and feel the embrace of the light that comes from the trust of other people. This love then amplifies the work we angels do in the surroundings. This is likened to prayer, as the amplification of our work helps the spirit lift others in harmony with the church. Understanding the feelings of others then becomes a comfort, as our love helps us steer the direction of understanding. Since you shed light on the mirror of others, setting an example by standing up to evil, the devils will curse and persecute you and the church.

“As you lead, and show others how to lead, as a soldier in the battle against devils, Jesus will share the burden with you. And as you begin to understand how light is shined into the hearts of others, they will start to question whether their own motives reflect their faith. And in those moments of indecision and hurt, they can turn inward to find Jesus. It is through your calling of passion to help their sinfulness, together with the help of the heavens, that these people call out to God.

“Author, through this conversation, you will begin to understand why the heavenly Father sent his own begotten Son to the earth. You will understand that He did this for your forgiveness, as this is how you are purified and made whole. Providing advice to others does not, by itself, secure their forgiveness. If that is how you go about seeking forgiveness for others, you cannot and will not understand how sin is forgiven. Instead, keep their suffering in your thoughts and speak of the intuitive prayer in your consciousness, based on

what you have learned from that perspective. Listening to your surroundings and answering from your own perspective has played an important part in shaping your learned behaviors in this life, including engaging in these selfless acts. However, you are not the Holy Spirit. You cannot forgive sin as Jesus does. But as you offer advice, drawing from your own hope and memories, you and the Holy Father will co-create the best version of yourself.

“Author, being a king in His church comes at a price, as you must not only understand your own evil, but you must also understand that evil cannot be tolerated and undertake to master the rejection of evil. The evil that would come from the anti-personality self would then become light instead. As you shine your light as an example to those suffering hardships in the world, your understanding of yourself grows. Do not leave your heart. Stay warmly aware of the intuitive conversation held with and in the Holy Spirit. But let the conversations from your surroundings come through to you as you understand not only the good workings of the Father in Heaven, but also the reality that is being experienced by others. Consider those two sides of the conversation, inward and outward, through your own perspective.

“It takes practice to shine light through others in prayer, and doing this speaks of the evil renounced in your lifetime. There are many who will become heavenly kings in this world, but you are the light scholar and king to help build Jesus’s church. And all the branches of his church will become restored as one united heavenly church. Then it will be understood that the world is one step away from becoming liberated from its own enslavement.

“Author, there is one more lens through which you must view the stories and punishments that occur for those kings and queens in Heaven’s church. You must consider how sin can be resolved by the grace of the Father. The sinful will understand their light if they are willing to listen to spiritual truths. And as you allow your own perspective to guide you as you lead, you will honor and serve your savior, Jesus Christ. The miracle of forgiveness of sin will be witnessed as the wicked feel his grace enter their hearts. They will admit ownership of fault in a show of penance. And as they become aware of their own tolerance for evil, and they rejoice in their acceptance of God through Jesus Christ, their burden will become acknowledged as well through passion.

“The leaders of the church will focus on this topic of conversation so they may gain a deep understanding of how the eucharist will offer an experience with Jesus to those who show penance. And in time, those who have lived a life of sinfulness will be given the chance to learn how to live their lives as faithful soldiers of Christ.

“Now,” said the Archangel Michael, “Your description of your experience with the dragon will be sufficient to convey how sly and tempting he can be to people. When you began writing this book, you acknowledged serving the dragon and protecting his welfare through your actions as you searched for your own answers. And by the grace of Jesus Christ, you grew distant from that master as you came to know Jesus as your personal savior.”

Then Michael said, “Author, through these conversations, you will develop a deeper understanding of the people in your surroundings, as many of them have had similar un-

fortunate experiences with evil and engaged in similar conversations with the holy heavens. These experiences are part of the human condition in life. By reflecting on your own testimony in which you reveal your experiences in these conversations, you can understand much more about suffering than you might have anticipated. Trust in the preparation you have received from the Lord and Savior. And speak truth from your heart.”

The Archangel continued, “We have shared our knowledge with you—the ideas that are transparent to us and that we profess to you through inner dialogue—and we will continue to shine a light in this way. As the light spreads across communities, this knowledge is shared throughout the world. And that knowledge becomes the light that serves humanity in the darkest hour.

“Oh, Author, there is something similar shared by all people who are part of this world. That is, everyone in the world needs the savior, Jesus Christ, to reside in their hearts and reconcile any sins that they carry. For that to happen, the heavens will intervene and share much more with you about Jesus Christ from the Word of the Holy Bible. The Word of Jesus Christ is his disciplined testimony revealed through the Holy Bible. For your part, you can decide which of your thoughts and experiences best match what the heavens reveal to frame your testimony and anchor these stories in. Remember that to understand where you are going in the world in passion and purpose, and to help alleviate the suffering of others through the advice in your testimony, it will help that the Bible has been useful and meaningful to you in your own daily life.

“Let us begin. ‘The Word was with God, and the Word was God.’ This recitation of Jesus Christ’s introduction of God into the world has his eternal understanding paired with God the Father, meaning that he was all-loving and almighty in soul and understanding as he entered into this world.

“The view that Jesus Christ was simply a man made of flesh is a misunderstanding held by some who cannot fathom how he can be made of flesh and feel punishment and yet also have conquered death. For through the spiritual knowledge of everlasting goodness, it is understood that he was purer than man. He embodied both God’s immanence and transcendence, serving as a bridge between Creator and creation. Author, the view of Jesus Christ as being the Word itself was prophesied in the Gospel of John. And given this understanding, we can really begin to know Jesus, not just as a man, but as consubstantial with the Father, meaning that he was of one substance with the divine and timeless Word of God.

“There is much more to this topic that we could glean from the Holy Bible, but I will focus on how it impacts your own testimony to sinners who suffer in life. John’s Gospel suggests the presence of a timeless and eternal kingdom of Heaven that God has reign over in existence in your world right now. This means that for others to search for God in their hearts is to understand how the Holy Ghost resides in them. The Holy Ghost moves throughout the world and binds all things together in the love of the Savior, Jesus. Therefore, when you explain to others how the kingdom of Heaven on Earth may be understood, you can let them know

that the spiritual identity of Jesus is the king of kings who reigns over all of mankind already.

“Acknowledging Jesus’s divine nature and identifying him with all things on Earth and through the love of the creator, God, is turning within to the heart’s door to Heaven and exclaiming that Jesus is in all things already.”

The Archangel Michael continued, “Author, you recognize that there is a faithful identity in you, but how much do you understand of the Holy Bible and the authenticity of its teachings? The alignment of God’s begotten Son with Jesus Christ has been discussed for a long time, and it has been subject to countless opinions and interpretations within the church. Each successive generation imposes its own understanding and perspective through which they develop their stories and draw upon scripture for knowledge and guidance. This includes guidance and lessons about turning away from evil and sin in life. Therefore, examining the conscience against all that is wrong in one’s life and living in scripture is good and wholesome. And of course, the church provides us insight into the discipline of interpreting our faith.

“Living a life of faith imparts on us, the children of God, the joyous discipline of examining our conscience and engaging in action to learn from our surroundings. Therefore, by maintaining a willingness to understand and accept chastisement, the heart remains open to the Holy Ghost purifying our weaknesses, as the loving embrace from God’s son. God adapted his eternal Word to the flesh of humans, with all its weaknesses, and spoke with humans in our languages to offer us the holy scripture.

“Each king who understands how we strengthen our own testimonies by adapting the teachings of the church as a frame of reference in our advice will undoubtedly draw strength from the kingdom of Heaven. Applying the church’s strengths through our advice will then allow others to study and learn from this community. For in the garden of Paradise, each person who serves Christ will be met somewhere between their suffering and the Father’s will. This suffering for salvation marks the beginning of the search for His grace. However, a confession of the enemy within warrants His grace only when penance is offered.

“Author, we have discussed at length how the Holy Ghost motivates us through an awakened spirit. Your consciousness allows you to understand your surroundings, but you have yet to meet the Christ and fully face the ramifications of your sins. Therefore, you should show your commitment and your belonging to the established church, through which advice can be offered.

“Author,” said Michael, “do not help elevate any who testify for their own purposes. They may loudly proclaim and seek to impose their worldly will, but it will be unfulfilled. Those who are kings of the faith in Christ will encourage his Word to be fulfilled through his intervention and transfiguration.

“In accordance with the commandments of God, the spirit moves all things to obey Him. Therefore, realize, as a king who provides advice, that the church is a community through which the commandments of God are upheld.

“The rituals and prayers that sustained the Lord’s people have been handed down through the traditions of a line of

prophets, Jesus, and the discernment of the church. Therefore, these acts, which lead to the development of a contrite heart, are useful for teaching generations to uphold His commandments. And because all things that allow a person of faith to fully accept Jesus's teachings are understood in the garden, that faithful person then understands the Lord's commandments. And through the commandments, a person's actions and thoughts are obedient to the good news of the Holy Bible. The Holy Ghost will recognize the purified heart and will help establish the transfiguration of the person. Just as John exclaimed in his Gospel, 'He must increase, but I must decrease.'"

The Archangel Michael continued, "Once you begin to act in accordance with Jesus's teachings, following his Word in that garden within your heart, you will accept his willingness to change you in spirit. He will resurrect your faith in Him, and you will become the heart and mouth of the Father Almighty.

"For any person can look back on the things they have learned over their lifetime to understand the living world, but they can also draw upon this knowledge to make calculations to spread deceptive opinions or strategic lies. However, it is the purview of the Holy Spirit to make a person understand and obey God's commandments. Meditate therefore on the commandments of the living Christ, and allow the heart to ponder how they interact in your surroundings and affect your advice. Young king, you will understand the power of grace before your fall. And you will understand with more reverence how to abide by those commandments through the purification of your penitent acts.

“Author, if you were to listen inwardly to hear the wisdom of Christ and speak out to expose the evil character within to others, then you would understand in time that the commandments are grounded in the Truth that is the Word in the Holy Bible. A spiritual experience has yet to occur, and it awaits you in Paradise, where you will meet Jesus Christ. And the transfiguration that will happen within your heart will continue throughout the timeframe of human existence. You will experience such joyous understanding of the character of others, which you will be able to adopt, according to the circumstances, in furtherance of spreading His truth. God has handed down His laws to help us to understand how we are to obey him, and the Son of God, Jesus Christ, will help you live in accordance with His judgment.

“Author, how you are to interpret the will of the Holy Ghost will depend on your experiences and the nature of the surroundings of those who suffer. I will explain this.

“The Word of Jesus in scripture comes from his desire to love his Father wholly. The desire for all things spiritual and of the mind to become as one in God’s love. This charity of love for the Father in Heaven is then bestowed upon his people, where it is spread amongst them, as the act of spreading this love is performing an act for others as one would have done unto themselves. Therefore, each person should love as they have been taught to love through this charity of spirit. Along with the commandments given by prophets prior, such as the prohibition of murder, adultery, and divorce, these are the two greatest laws to uphold.

“Author, these are the truths in the Holy Bible, and Jesus will walk with you and help you see how to obey these com-

mandments. For these laws provide the framing through which all prayer is understood, and through which all actions of people in society can be adjudged.

“Therefore, it is important to understand how to help alleviate the suffering of people in society, as this is a moral principle. All men, women, and children in a society need help to lessen their suffering. No one is perfect, and yet, there are those who wish to be seen as being above God’s laws. For this purpose, they will announce their failures in jest as they fall in life, hoping to mislead others.

“Author, the logic that guides you to believe in and witness the commandments to those around you is the same logic that supports your advice. You have announced how the truth of judgment can be found in the Word, and this can be amplified in the stories you tell. You will not understand how to forgive sin. Instead, you will encourage the spirit of the Holy Ghost to transform the ways of those who are sinful, in their intelligence and their faithful actions. And you will give them forewarning of how the truth can help through divine intervention, as it has worked in your experiences.”

Then, the Archangel announced how one may be transformed by the Holy Ghost through this miracle of obedience and servitude. “As it is done through you, others shall take notice. And as you offer your advice, the spiritual light is amplified through your love for others. That is, they will take notice of how you love your Father in Heaven and how you are transformed through loving your neighbor as yourself. Showing this love is how we are to obey in a meaningful way.

“Author, if there is any person who does not deserve to be loved by you, or if you are timid to show them the love you would have others show you, keep these people at a distance. As you show love, you must remember that those who receive it may manipulate your offerings for their own benefit at your expense. However, in taking on their suffering, you are offering to take on the Lord’s suffering as well. In time, you will understand in your heart and mind His strength to determine how to best achieve joy and love for humanity. And in that suffering for the sins of other people, you will carry a burden, as Jesus has shown us how to do, to love those who sin against the heavenly Father.

“Author, as a king in Heaven, you will feel the charity to love all things in humanity, as a burden carried to aid others, and you will protect the heavens, as Jesus does, and you will continue to learn. As you continue to abide by this understanding and walk in faith, you will see many miracles become reality. For as you walk with Jesus and carry this cross, you are absolved of your sins through his grace. And he absolves the sins of those around you in society. Live in faith. And let Jesus understand the people he loves. In time, your light will be amplified in other hearts—those in which you have manifested his Holy Ghost.

“And Author, the spirit of his holy teachings is good news to all those willing to announce him as the Savior. For calling the name of Jesus in your heart will bring him forth, and, through his suffering, he will come and unravel any predicament you experience. He will burden his love and lift you up, as only he can, to offer you rest. For how can Jesus Christ not love his apostles who go out in the world

to spread the Word from the scriptures? This advice I share with you is for all who seek salvation through the Savior's love.

"There in the garden, and then in his heavenly kingdom, you will take ownership of the role you play in the creation story of God. For your commitment to following His commandments, for showing love to all those who sin, and for helping to elevate all those looking to better themselves, He will absolve your wickedness.

"Author, God's acceptance of your acts of penance will resolve your pain and suffering. Do this penance and accept His chastisement to atone for the sins that weigh on your head. As a king in the heavenly kingdom, you shall understand that performing penance for a sin in life is, in a sense, chastising your own heart. Since you are weak as a person suffering, which the mentally insane plot against, their hatred is felt as a rebuff against sin. But your weakness is their opportunity to undermine your goodness as you work to preserve the Holy Spirit as a connection to the heavenly kingdom. Understand that to resolve your sin and carry the love of the cross with you and for others, you must master your weakness through honest communication with Christ.

"Author, your penance is to hold God's commandments dear to your heart and act with contrition in a way that will benefit others. That will assure your place as a trusted source for Jesus to talk to you, in your heart and prayers.

"This act of reconciliation is to occur prior to meeting others in the garden, where they can find Jesus. Likewise, your acts of sharing the church's opportunities to observe the sacraments also increase your heavenly worth. So often, the

sacraments are misunderstood by others who sin and suffer. But by helping them to avail themselves of these opportunities, you become a bridge of goodness and love, and a source to help others find Jesus.

“Author,” said the Archangel, “Jesus gives his guidance as he resides in the hearts of those he loves. He offers these suffering people a way to restore their personalities through his soulful body of eternal light. And in that moment when you testify to the crowds in society, where no one mentions how to bring Jesus into the heart, you can explain and justify how you trust that his Holy Spirit will offer divinity.

“Those who preach his Word through the scripture are able to offer the most effective advice. To do that, one must understand the intimate and dynamic nature of the relationship between the heavenly Father and Jesus, the begotten Son.”

The Archangel Michael continued, “Author, the window of time that is eternity is transparent for some to view. For others, the time and place they exist in feels very real. The projected world, where everything feels real, is misinterpreted as opinion or fact. There are others still who understand that eternity works under one creator and is guided like multiple frames under one storyline, and they know this because of their faith.

“Faith in Jesus Christ then leads to an understanding of how love is patient. For those who understand the loving embrace and Word spoken through the spirit of others, and in their own heart, understand prayerful existence. This prayerfulness and love that is extended by Jesus to those suffering in society is then an absolution. Therefore, as sinfulness oc-

curs on different levels in society, from individuals to groups, to communities and countries, and so on, there is ample opportunity for the prayerful king to offer advice.

“Author, there is a line of prayer established from and within the church. That connection of all things truthful is dispersed into the world, offering its guidance through its disciples. And learning how that prayerful communication works with your heavenly understanding will help you interpret the world’s suffering and translate the living spirit’s voice in your heart. Oh King, you shall understand the wisdom more deeply when you hear the truth and trust the divine inspiration you receive to help guide the worried and ill to awaken through the stories told.

“When there is nothing more to say, and the worried and the infirm have turned toward resurrecting their faith, you will understand how it was that your story became the narrative that helped many understand the passion of Jesus on the cross.

“Author, one follows the church by interpreting the world through the lens of the heavenly Father and His love, while showing your love for your neighbors. And in that moment of awareness, when you realize that you are a messenger who brings the Word of Christ to the lame and the wicked, you will begin to see the transformation in the world that will bring the heavenly kingdom to Earth.

“In previous conversations, you have discussed the kingdom of Heaven here on Earth as something that will provide a way for people to come together and organize, and to discuss the return of Jesus as the messiah. And in that way, the communities will prepare themselves to think both inter-

nally and externally with the surroundings of the church in prayerful communication. That prayerful communication is inspired, just as the text of the Holy Bible was, and these apply to the daily lives of all who experience the human condition and all who suffer and need salvation.

“Author, there is much more you can do as part of this church to evangelize the Word of Jesus through your talents. And to seek out purpose in the church in support of a deeper understanding is to show an active pursuit of Jesus in your life. It is beyond your capabilities to understand what initially brought you to his church, but now, it is living in the heavenly kingdom that stokes your passion and motivates your actions. To advance these conversations, you should take your hopes and fears, and your aspirations and failures, and offer them up before Jesus Christ as you seek his guidance in constructing a new identity for yourself through him.”

Part Two

“Author?” Jesus Christ called to me. “If you have a moment, seize it. Take that moment to consider how you can share your faith and extend your discipline to other people around you in society. And in the conversations you have with those people about their lives, include my love in your tone and sentiment. And in return, I will ensure that the identity you seek to have in me will be achieved.

“If you learn where these people are coming from, and you recognize that their behaviors stem from their life experiences, which tend to be limited, then you will understand their growth. Their talents and the judgments they have of themselves and society will create opportunities within conversations where they will be open to letting themselves be affected by our love. And given your faith in Christ, this narrative will lead you to recognize how you can include your testimony in the conversation and how you can become involved in their dreams.

“Author, in a moment, you will understand how to help others follow me in their dreams and passions. And as you involve yourself in the pursuit of these dreams of turning their love into reality through actions of their mouths, feet, and hands, you will understand their flaws. As you help them identify their trials and misgivings, you will understand the history of the gestures they’ve made, and how they respond to love or hatred. And in those moments where the people in the community respond to love with appreciation, you will understand me, your savior.”

Jesus Christ looked at me inquisitively as we sat next to each other in Heaven. But he continued with confidence. “Author, those ideas of identity will surface for each person from the deep oceans of the universes. Man lives beneath the firmament, under the waters below. And as they become aware that love is given to them to aid in the rediscovery of their talents and relationships, they will fight against it. As those people in society have distanced their identities far from the church, outward toward nothingness, they will rebel.

“The pain they have caused and that they’ve experienced themselves through their misgivings has given rise to their hatred. As they chart a course to build their identity upon their own words, they will discover how hatred has harmed them. And in the joy they experience from conquering others in their quest to stay focused on themselves, their weaknesses will be apparent to all.

“Author, by breathing new life into their realities, you can expect them to regret the pain they caused or amplified in their relationships. And they will realize that fear is something they tend to project onto others in their denial. That judgment then will be their downfall over time. Even when they feel love again, the hatred they were exposed to before controls their new patterns of behavior, and they become submerged in the pain and denial once more.

“The awakening that you have offered is a second wind, and a new baptism of spirit at the gates of Heaven will inspire an identity of love. If these people choose to accept love into their hearts and change their course toward building faith into their newest identities, their spiritual families will

recognize this and will assist them. The heavenly angels and loved ones past will continue to impress upon their hearts through prayer. That inner instability will calm over time, and the person, whether man or woman, will achieve some level of attachment to the spirit through the heart.”

Jesus Christ continued, “Author, this newfound inner stability, when focused on love in the heart, will combine both in a new identity for these people through me, their Lord.

“Rebirth into a new life in me is one of the central purposes of some of the sacraments. During those sacraments, one is born again in the Holy Spirit and given entrance into the church. However, my presence in their hearts is love, and that love is offered unconditionally. Therefore, participation in the sacraments sets a foundation of peace for that person’s life.

“Author, the Holy Spirit guides you in that love, as a king offering advice. By evangelizing through your testimony of how Jesus has provided you grace, you can welcome those who are suffering into the church to admit their defeat and grow in spiritual nourishment.”

Jesus Christ then shared, “Author, if any nourishment is to come from the spiritual light for salvation, it will be through penance. This spiritual nourishment is then for those who want to develop their identity through a loving embrace and knowledge. Then, when you share these ideas, and you and your neighbors decide to show your love and embrace me as your savior, all of society will embrace humility.

“Author, when people in society begin to realize how they all share a sacred resemblance of spirit with one another, that is when they see that their stories also share commonality through the church. Love is fed through a person’s identity and acts as a filter that distorts or sharpens their understanding of human suffering and redemption. It takes humility to see how this condition of humanity works and to adapt to it. The transformation of Christ through love is therefore gifted to society by the compassionate acknowledgment of human suffering.

“Whereas those who let their own will dominate their thoughts and close their minds to the reflection of the testimonies of the loving members of the church, they will continue their fall from grace. And in that fall from grace from the wisdom of the heavens, they will figure out how to gain and stay in power through devious methods. That desire for control and the plotting of how they will develop their own identity will then spread to others who replicate their thought patterns, who begin to feed their own greed and lust. This mirrorlike behavior, which leads them to attack and persecute the churchgoers, will become subconscious. Satan will develop many ways to deceive through the patterns of control, including war and the starvation of people, to hold onto his power.

“Author, this movement of behavior from conscious to subconscious shows the manipulation of spiritual behavior that can be expected in your surroundings. And you will learn how to stand with me, your messiah, and with God. For when you make your loving behavior the standard on

which other relationships are based, others will begin to recognize the stories of their own identity in me, Christ.

“The heavenly kingdom is one which will continue to grow on Earth. And there will be redemption for those who choose to share their testimonies and live in the Christian faith as they follow me. For I will forewarn these churchgoers when and how to survive my judgment against the sinful. Satan uses mind control. And under that control, those who willingly surrender to him out of greed and lust and numerous other temptations, those who turn against my commandments and my love, for them, the chance for redemption will no longer exist.

“Author, the purification of those who control the world through their position of power or money will no longer be enough to bring them into the heavens. If they believe they live in a hellish prison now, the elevation of their power will just create another level for them to hit in their downfall without the spiritual love, light, and laughter that comes with the grace Heaven provides to man.

“Love is my Father’s commandment, above all things. And your love for me will, in turn, be your sanctuary from this battle of temptation and struggle of suffering in life. What began as my burden, holding your faith while being crucified, will become my joy when I welcome you into my heavenly home. And, while you come into this relationship with me as we proceed in the spirit’s battle of suffering in life, you will find joy when you help with the battles of others, and they turn toward me and my church.

“Author, it may seem simple, but remember that the surest way for you to maintain faith in my heavenly kingdom

is to stay humble. We are united together in the development of new life on Earth. In that development, where you are a king of many, and the number of my followers increases, there will be increasing loving joy surrendered to me.

“This will be the moment when getting past your identity and the devil will be the most difficult. And in the world, where people respond to the evil they themselves harbor, they will view this game as an unfolding drama of characters in spirit. For when the evil conquers and takes a soul, the fallen angel will become an enemy to my church.

“The battle over who tells their story best then is one that should not be overlooked. Development of the ability to communicate with others will make a significant difference, since everyone tells their own testimony uniquely, and the impact it has is different for everyone who hears it. However, the praise you share of the church will always be motivational to those who see good in others. The love you share is effective for the people who suffer most. And the evil will turn away most often to secure their positions of control.

“Therefore, be brave in your heart and mind. Understand that I, your savior, am the Word and the Truth. And, speaking in your own terms, you will thwart the devil by relying on scripture to supplement your testimony. Include my Word in your efforts to share your story, because you will be discussing the truth.

“Author, the people who sin and follow Satan will abuse their positions and will curse you as you share your testimony. Therefore, you must use your knowledge of the human condition, including the barriers of social intelligence, to protect yourself. The evil protect themselves and their pow-

er through their games and their conduct, including their lies, their deception, and their own storytelling. These power games that the devil plays then help people maintain power because they do not disclose that they are motivated by war. They conquer people by telling lies as they confuse others who trust them. They manipulate people through fear and prey on the weaknesses of others by tempting them with money or power. They will undermine your identity in Jesus through the false stories they tell when you are not around to discredit them.

“God will have no part in this abuse of power. And in that manipulation, their hatred will become lunacy, for I will leave their hearts cold and burdened.” Jesus continued, “Author, continue to develop your kingship in my church. Continue your passion for rebuilding this holy kingdom, with your mind and heart focused on me. And through love and skill, you will begin to build up strength in faith and resurrect my kingdom on Earth.

“Author, the skills it takes to build my kingdom are as simple as letting your love for me be extended to your neighbor.”

The king of kings, Jesus Christ, then said, “It is not your burden to show the love of my heavenly kingdom any further than you have in relaying this testimony. You build the kingdom of Heaven in accordance with my loving advice. You listen for my voice in your consciousness by centering on the heart and mind. And therefore, I will free you from any curses placed on your head by Satan.

“You will understand how to ask for these curses to be removed through our prayerful conversations. As you wel-

come those who can build a church with you in your life, speak of the pain and suffering of others. And within this legacy of building through sacrifice and my loving embrace, you will understand how to involve my judgment as well. Pray when you feel curses within you. These curses manifest through the devil himself to manipulate those people who need to feel power and control. They deny me and my followers while imposing pain on others through wishes or even deliberate actions.

“Therefore, Author, you may find solace and salvation in your relationship with me, within your heart and mind. And as you ask forgiveness through me, you will add a prayer to examine the conscience of those who you believe are cursing you. But do not curse these people yourself. Instead, ask me, your Lord and savior, to guide your attempts to handle this behavior that you feel is sinful and cursed toward you. Ask me to investigate the person’s habits and, if judgment is tolerated, how to approach them. And if you feel that the burden of the curse is too much to handle, reinvestigate how you could be aided by speaking to people in the church.

“However, if these people are drawn into using cruel and deceptive actions as a way to manipulate their positions in the surroundings, then I will set a trial for them. They will be charged for their behaviors, as I will present their judgment. And, if it is the devil that they follow, they will be excommunicated from the church and expelled from my heavenly kingdom on Earth. For these people who create an order to keep power by manipulating and tempting those in the surroundings will be punished. Their order will fall to my judgment.

“My request then is to communicate the facts to me while they are starved for love. These people will be given a chance to redeem themselves until I make my return to Earth. And as the purification of humanity continues, you will understand that my judgment is right and good.

“Author, the books of life, which cast all behavior for each memory, are examined during this trial. By asking for revelations of sinfulness, you will subject yourself to examination as well. You cannot lie to me when you ask for sin to be revealed and curses to be stopped. Therefore, you will include yourself in the judgment of others at times to understand how their curses and temptations will be defeated. Follow my judgment for you.

“For their will includes evil thoughts, such as manipulating the masses. And as their false god in the devil appears, you will need my Word to discern what is good and holy. For my intervention will bring pain into their world. Do you understand how they control their intentions through identifying with an order of Satan? Therefore, our relationship will become much more important to you to discern my heavenly wishes upon you during this trial.

“Author, there is one who rules over all mankind. In all things built upon this world is my Father’s love, through me and the living spirit of the Holy Ghost. And searching for this presence in all opportunities will allow you to accept the things you cannot change.

“If you listen carefully through the heart and mind, and you begin to have a spiritual vision and receive my knowledge, that will bring you closer to understanding the warfare that is occurring around you. This war between those who

enslave others through pain, lies, and torment will demonstrate their truest nature. Do not be frightened though, as you cannot keep focus on their existence. Instead, depend on my loving embrace as the foundation for your life. Continue to find love in all things through our heavenly kingdom.

“Author, there will be a moment in this process when you will receive spiritual wisdom and vision. When you discover the person who has been cursing you, take their fall from the heavenly kingdom, and you will understand where their dominion is. And you will hold the communication with the heavenly family yourself. Do not reach out to comfort or console the person in this moment, for the process of making Heaven on Earth is not complete yet.

“In the spiritual insight gleaned from witnessing how the shadow devils bear a resemblance to the curses put on others, you will understand our conversations about protection. And under this protection, you will know how the fount of spiritual knowledge in the heart works. In the matter of spiritual knowledge, ask the angels to protect you. And from that spiritual fount found in the heavens, the angels will take charge and nourish your soul through compassion.

“Author, the fall of humanity was experienced by each person when they followed the serpent into the universes. And from that Tree of Knowledge will the answers of humanity be destroyed. Let me explain. Once Satan is put on trial, with the angels testifying and battling evil across your earthly landscape, the end of his dark magic will be done. And his thought control will be evaded. For temptation and confusion will fall into the hellfire. And in the shadows of the curses, Satan will remain.

“The evil pit itself, the belly that is controlled through its remains, will exist for a few hundred years. And the light of the Morning Star will eat itself, disappearing into the hell-fire from which it rose, into the vacuum of nothingness once more.

“Author, in the scripture of the Holy Bible, a verse in the book of Isaiah describes my victory. Therein, I explain how Satan fell from Heaven as the Morning Star, describing it to my servant. Satan brought ruin to the nations, and he will fall back into the depths of the pit. Author, there is a fallen angel from within the pit that will extinguish itself. And all who are still in my loving embrace when that happens will forever be alive in the new Jerusalem.

“The mind and heart were redeemed, overturning the imminent death that other people had sought through their thoughts and reactions. The devil used fear to control their motivation, from lust to greed, or body to soul. He took the angelic and hastened their fall by promising them an easier life. But after those who found my love in the heart and mind received redemption through the scriptures and their testimonies, they began my church.

“Author, the new Jerusalem will be a holy and sacred place where my church will be my throne room. And I will begin to live once more among mankind in my prophecy fulfilled. My heavenly Father’s will shall be done, carried out through that love and laughter once more in the sight of humanity.

“Author, there is something else we should discuss. The frequencies of the wavelength we have discussed before can increase to a higher rate. That feeling of understanding my

existence in the Word in the heart, without the serpent interfering, is good. The magnetism is constantly drawing us closer together within the new Jerusalem. Do you understand how we think intuitively together in prayer? And in that understanding of the heart's place in one another, we will have a communication of love.

“Author, let the serpent be damned at this point. The devil does not magnetize the thoughts of others through evil temptation. But all who are in anguish witness the resemblance of the heart of the devil to its own curses, cast by the shadow devil. And these fallen angels become hideous.

“You cannot concern yourself with low-level frequencies anymore. You belong in your own heart. Let the records indicate how your love keeps you out of the pit, and places you in my holiest Jerusalem.

“These ideas of heart and mind shall be explored further. For in learning and understanding my ways, you will gain knowledge of how your true individual self is the person you shall become. As you become more secure with belonging in your heart, you ensure the fulfillment of becoming one in togetherness with the kingdom of Heaven.

“Author, as you reflect on your memories of yourself and sin, will you understand your identity in me through the perspective of others. My loving embrace, then, is freedom. Each person will sing a song in their heart and soul, celebrating how they belong in the kingdom.

“By accepting and embracing a loving rule in this kingdom of Heaven on Earth, you will witness the fulfillment of the church's mission. The kingdom will be built by the hands and hearts of the people who love my wisdom. Each heart

has within it the Holy Spirit, which has gone and planted the riches of relationships as a garden. Author, in that place is the next day of the heavens.

“As each person is elevated throughout this holy city and welcomed in the loving embrace, they will not only have a deep understanding of the garden of paradise, but they will experience it through soulful habits of thought. By conquering sinful behaviors, overcoming Satan’s temptations, and turning your spiritual sight toward the angelic battlefield that is Earth, you will experience a new vibration of love resonating in your relationships. For this is the love that draws all people together. And in my kingdom, each person will belong as part of the whole, but still be independent of one another in spirit.

“Author, follow me, and I will lead you through the veil to my bridge to the heavens. I will no longer merely offer you the kingdom on Earth. Instead, I will welcome you in that garden where you will live by offering my assistance as cathedrals are built. For in time, that garden will resemble the holy city you build in the new Jerusalem.

Jesus Christ, as Lord and Messiah, then extended his light from within Heaven for me to witness. He offered his hand, and I took that assistance as I walked with him through the garden of my own house toward that bridge. He was the land, and his body and blood were his sacrifice to offer this understanding to me. In this, a glorious event was revealed to me—the redemption of Adam and Eve. Jesus had created this vision in his story with the Father, and he led me along in his love.

“Author, the kingdom has been created and will be forever. You may come back to it in time, as this eternal lesson is now taught and learned through your stories. The record of your life follows you in death. And the punishment that is held over you, keeping you in a state of unease, is a purgatory of sorts. But the promise of a heavenly kingdom has been given if you follow in my testimony of the Holy Father.

“Now you will understand how this bridge, or tunnel, which was created in infinity and stands between your world and the garden, has been established. For I died for the sins of humanity, that they may walk across this divide. Much like the vessel that Noah crafted to save humanity from the flood, or the dry floor of the sea that Moses divided to save my people, I have created this eternal bridge for you to walk over. Or you can fly with me using the angelic wings I will give you at the angelic fount.

“Author, in time or space, in projection or wave, these sounds that are perceived by your senses slow down the resonating vibration of your spirit so that you may capture a moment for your book on life.

“Author, this book was written with the help of angels, the Holy Spirit, and many other heavenly beings that we can call spiritual family. You have gained the truth by trusting and believing in me as your shepherd. So now, see the vision of Heaven, as it has been shown to you within your spirit. Experience it, not only as visualized scenes or scents, but also as sounds and surfaces, as the accumulation of every sensory speck eternity can provide.

“Only you can ensure that this particular story is told so that others may understand as well, for your heart is one that

sings in a unique way. This appreciation of my love will help to make my bridge a reality. And helping others cross this bridge into Heaven will be your domain. You will be an angel in life. Carry these souls who remain in the holiest place on Earth, my new Jerusalem, and walk them into the garden. Let them know that the Tree of Life was a gift that was ignored and taken for granted by Adam and Eve. And then offer them the spirit of my embrace. Prepare them to hear me. Help them to keep their minds and hearts open and ready to accept that vision and vibration of Heaven in the gardens of Paradise.

“Author, you will bring them the chance for new life, and I will offer the bridge for all to walk across to enter Heaven.

“And this record of all humanity brings this story to a close. Only in Heaven can you experience what you have ignored for all these years on Earth, particularly the freedom of creation in my Father’s intent. You will understand that this intent was shaped by the moment you accepted the burden to seek His love and share the suffering of me, his begotten Son, in your testimony.

“So, in the world of the heavens, apart from any external sensemaking, you will testify in my name. Glorify me as the Son of the heavenly Father once more. Speak of eternity as a sound that cannot be described in words other than what I have provided. And welcome me into the world to vanquish the sinful tendencies of the heart.

“This feeling for the heavenly Father will be understood by those reading this book. And in His name, as I have been anointed as the Messiah, you will understand how to call upon me.

“Author, as you show yourself and others love by celebrating in my anointing, please remember that you are in your heart. Do not accept anything other than experiences of the heavenly Father’s intent and in accord with His commandments. After the creation came a separation and collision. But before that was an eternity, which you have described to the readers.

“I love you. And at times, for some of your words or actions or emotions, you have taken blame for not embracing me and the Father of the eternal city. But you can use your imagination now to understand how to praise us in this event. And you should hold others to the same standard in their stories. For when you see anything other than this garden of Paradise and the bridge to Heaven, you should question why that is. And when you are testifying from my wisdom and within my embrace, take my hand, and I will show you how I will perform your miracles. This is the everlasting goodness you can experience for yourself in spirit in the eternal city.

“The Father understands where your weaknesses of character can be adjusted. Let the Father and His son carry you through these events. And as an angelic being with words for all, who helps bring others to us through your own stories, you will give me the glory to stoke the passion of others so that I may deliver them to my Father.

“God Bless.”

Also by Todd M. Anderson

Reflections on Faith

Believe

Connections

Garden of Harmonies

King and Prophet

Kingdom Building

Light Scholars

Never Give In

Paradise

Personality Program

Super Conscious

The Light and Filament

The Way of Man

Universal Records

Theater of Everyday Life

Mirrors for Reflection

The Anti-Personality

The Battle Between Good and Evil

Competitive
Angelic Wisdom
Trumpets Calling
Conversion of a Sinner
Angelic Identity

Standalone
Reflections on Faith
Theater of Everyday Life : A Christian Perspective

